



H. G. Wells

**A Short History
of The World**

A SHORT HISTORY OF THE WORLD

BY
H. G. WELLS

CONTENTS

CHAPTER	Page
I. THE WORLD IN SPACE	1
II. THE WORLD IN TIME	five
III. THE BEGINNINGS OF LIFE	eleven
IV. THE AGE OF FISHES	sixteen
V. THE AGE OF THE COAL SWAMPS	21
VI. THE AGE OF REPTILES	26
VII. THE FIRST BIRDS AND THE FIRST MAMMALS	31
VIII. THE AGE OF MAMMALS	37
IX. MONKEYS, APES AND SUB-MEN	43
X. THE NEANDERTHALER AND THE RHODESIAN MAN	48
XI. THE FIRST TRUE MEN	53
XII. PRIMITIVE THOUGHT	60

XIII.	THE BEGINNINGS OF CULTIVATION	65
XIV.	PRIMITIVE NEOLITHIC CIVILIZATIONS	71
XV.	SUMERIA, EARLY EGYPT AND WRITING	77
XVI.	PRIMITIVE NOMADIC PEOPLES	eighty four
XVII.	THE FIRST SEA-GOING PEOPLES	91
XVIII.	EGYPT, BABYLON AND ASSYRIA	96
XIX.	THE PRIMITIVE ARYANS	104
XX.	THE LAST BABYLONIAN EMPIRE AND THE EMPIRE OF DARIUS I	109
XXI.	THE EARLY HISTORY OF THE JEWS	one hundred fifteen
XXII.	PRIESTS AND PROPHETS IN JUDEA	122
XXIII.	THE GREEKS	127
XXIV.	THE WARS OF THE GREEKS AND PERSIANS	134
XXV.	THE SPLENDOUR OF GREECE	139
XXVI.	THE EMPIRE OF ALEXANDER THE GREAT	a hundred forty five
XXVII.	THE MUSEUM AND LIBRARY AT ALEXANDRIA	150
XXVIII.	THE LIFE OF GAUTAMA BUDDHA	156
XXIX.	KING ASOKA	163
XXX.	CONFUCIUS AND LAO TSE	167
XXXI.	ROME COMES INTO HISTORY	174
XXXII.	ROME AND CARTHAGE	180
XXXIII.	THE GROWTH OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE	185
XXXIV.	BETWEEN ROME AND CHINA	196

- XXXV. THE COMMON MAN'S LIFE UNDER THE
EARLY ROMAN EMPIRE 201
- XXXVI. RELIGIOUS DEVELOPMENTS UNDER THE
ROMAN EMPIRE 208
- XXXVII. THE TEACHING OF JESUS 214
- XXXVIII. THE DEVELOPMENT OF DOCTRINAL
CHRISTIANITY 222
- XXXIX. THE BARBARIANS BREAK THE EMPIRE
INTO EAST AND WEST 227
- XL. THE HUNS AND THE END OF THE WESTERN
EMPIRE 233
- XLI. THE BYZANTINE AND SASSANID
EMPIRES 238
- XLII. THE DYNASTIES OF SUY AND TANG IN
CHINA 245
- XLIII. MUHAMMAD AND ISLAM 248
- XLIV. THE GREAT DAYS OF THE ARABS 253
- XLV. THE DEVELOPMENT OF LATIN
CHRISTENDOM 258
- XLVI. THE CRUSADES AND THE AGE OF PAPAL
DOMINION 267
- XLVII. RECALCITRANT PRINCES AND THE
GREAT SCHISM 277
- XLVIII. THE MONGOL CONQUESTS 287
- XLIX. THE INTELLECTUAL REVIVAL OF THE
EUROPEANS 294
- L. THE REFORMATION OF THE LATIN
CHURCH 304
- LI. THE EMPEROR CHARLES V 309
- LII. THE AGE OF POLITICAL EXPERIMENTS; OF
GRAND MONARCHY AND PARLIAMENTS AND

REPUBLICANISM IN EUROPE	318
LIII. THE NEW EMPIRES OF THE EUROPEANS IN ASIA AND OVERSEAS	329
LIV. THE AMERICAN WAR OF INDEPENDENCE	335
LV. THE FRENCH REVOLUTION AND THE RESTORATION OF MONARCHY IN FRANCE	341
LVI. THE UNEASY PEACE IN EUROPE THAT FOLLOWED THE FALL OF NAPOLEON	349
LVII. THE DEVELOPMENT OF MATERIAL KNOWLEDGE	355
LVIII. THE INDUSTRIAL REVOLUTION	365
LIX. THE DEVELOPMENT OF MODERN POLITICAL AND SOCIAL IDEAS	370
LX. THE EXPANSION OF THE UNITED STATES	382
LXI. THE RISE OF GERMANY TO PREDOMINANCE IN EUROPE	390
LXII. THE NEW OVERSEAS EMPIRES OF THE STEAMSHIP AND RAILWAY	393
LXIII. EUROPEAN AGGRESSION IN ASIA, AND THE RISE OF JAPAN	399
LXIV. THE BRITISH EMPIRE IN 1914	405
LXV. THE AGE OF ARMAMENT IN EUROPE, AND THE GREAT WAR OF 1914-18	409
LXVI. THE REVOLUTION AND FAMINE IN RUSSIA	415
LXVII. THE POLITICAL AND SOCIAL RECONSTRUCTION OF THE WORLD	421
CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE	429
INDEX	439

A SHORT HISTORY OF THE WORLD

I

THE WORLD IN SPACE

THE tale of our world is a tale this is nevertheless very imperfectly recognized. A couple of hundred years ago guys possessed the records of little more than the final 3 thousand years. What took place before that time become a be counted of legend and speculation. Over a huge a part of the civilized international it was believed and taught that the sector have been created all of sudden in 4004 B.C., although government differed as to whether or not this had came about within the spring or autumn of that 12 months. This fantastically unique misconception become based upon a too literal interpretation of the Hebrew Bible, and upon rather arbitrary theological assumptions connected therewith. Such ideas have lengthy considering been deserted by using spiritual teachers, and it's miles universally identified that the universe in which we stay has to all appearances existed for an huge period of time and probable for countless time. Of direction there can be deception in these appearances, as a room can be made to seem limitless via placing mirrors going through each different at either give up. But that the universe wherein we stay has existed best for six or seven thousand years can be appeared as an altogether exploded concept.

The earth, as anybody knows in recent times, is a spheroid, a sphere barely compressed, orange fashion, with a diameter of almost eight,000 miles. Its round form has been acknowledged

at least to a restrained number of clever human beings for nearly 2,500 years, but before that time it changed into speculated to be flat, and diverse ideas which now seem great have been entertained about its relations to the sky and the stars and planets. We know now that it rotates upon its 2axis (which is set 24 miles shorter than its equatorial diameter) each twenty-4 hours, and that that is the motive of the alternations of day and night, that it circles about the solar in a barely distorted and slowly variable oval path in a yr. Its distance from the solar varies among ninety-one and a 1/2 tens of millions at its nearest and 90-four and a half of million miles.

LUMINOUS SPIRAL CLOUDS OF MATTER

“LUMINOUS SPIRAL CLOUDS OF MATTER”

(Nebula photographed 1910)

Photo: G. W. Ritchey

About the earth circles a smaller sphere, the moon, at an average distance of 239,000 miles. Earth and moon are not the best our bodies to travel spherical the sun. There are also the planets, Mercury and Venus, at distances of thirty-six and sixty-seven hundreds of thousands of miles; and beyond the circle of the earth and brushing off a belt of severa smaller our bodies, the planetoids, there are Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune at mean distances of 141, 483, 886, 1,782, and 1,793 millions of miles respectively. These figures in 3thousands and thousands of miles are very tough for the mind to grasp. It may assist the reader’s creativeness if we lessen the sun and planets to a smaller, extra attainable scale.

THE

NEBULA SEEN EDGE ON

THE NEBULA SEEN EDGE-ON

Note the important core which, thru thousands and thousands of years, is cooling to solidity

Photo: G. W. Ritchey

If, then, we constitute our earth as a bit ball of one inch diameter, the sun would be a massive globe nine ft throughout and 323 yards away, that is about a fifth of a mile, four or five mins' strolling. The moon would be a small pea two ft and a 1/2 from the sector. Between earth and solar there will be the internal planets, Mercury and Venus, at distances of one hundred and twenty-five and two hundred and fifty yards from the solar. All round and about these our bodies there might be emptiness till you got here to Mars, 100 and seventy-five feet beyond the earth; Jupiter nearly a mile away, a foot in diameter; Saturn, a touch smaller, two miles off; Uranus four miles off and Neptune six miles off. Then nothingness and nothingness besides for small particles and drifting scraps of attenuated vapour for thousands of miles. The nearest celebrity to earth on this scale would be forty,000 miles away.

These figures will serve possibly to provide one a few thought of the substantial vacancy of space in which the drama of existence goes on.

For in all this extensive vacancy of area we know certainly of existence simplest upon the floor of our earth. It does not penetrate a lot greater than three miles down into the 4,000 miles that separate us from the centre of our globe, and it does not attain extra than five miles above its floor. Apparently all the limitlessness of area is otherwise empty and useless.

The private ocean dredgings pass right down to 5 miles. The highest recorded flight of an aeroplane is little greater than four miles. Men have reached to seven miles up in balloons, but at a fee of notable struggling. No fowl can fly so excessive as five miles, and small birds and insects which have been

carried up by way of aeroplanes drop off insensible a ways below that stage.

Five

II

THE WORLD IN TIME

IN the last fifty years there was much very pleasant and thrilling speculation on the part of medical guys upon the age and beginning of our earth. Here we can't pretend to give even a summary of such speculations because they involve the maximum diffused mathematical and bodily concerns. The reality is that the physical and astronomical sciences are nonetheless too undeveloped as but to make some thing of the kind more than an illustrative guesswork. The widespread tendency has been to make the estimated age of our globe longer and longer. It now seems possibly that the earth has had an independent lifestyles as a spinning planet flying round and spherical the solar for an extended length than 2,000,000,000 years. It may additionally have been plenty longer than that. This is a period of time that definitely overpowers the creativeness.

Before that big duration of separate life, the solar and earth and the opposite planets that circulate spherical the solar can also were a amazing swirl of subtle count in space. The telescope reveals to us in various parts of the heavens luminous spiral clouds of count number, the spiral nebulae, which appear to be in rotation approximately a centre. It is meant with the aid of many astronomers that the solar and its planets were once such a spiral, and that their count has gone through attention into its present form. Through majestic æons

that attention went on till in that significant remoteness of the past for which we've got given figures, the arena and its moon had been distinguishable. They had been spinning then plenty faster than they may be spinning now; they were at a lesser distance from the sun; they travelled round it very a good deal quicker, and they had been in all likelihood incandescent or molten at the surface. The sun itself changed into a much more blaze in the heavens.

6

THE

GREAT SPIRAL NEBULA

THE GREAT SPIRAL NEBULA

Photo: G. W. Ritchey

If we could move lower back via that infinitude of time and notice the earth on this in advance level of its records, we must behold a scene extra like the indoors of a blast furnace or the surface of a lava go with the flow before it cools and deserts over than some other present day scene. No water might be seen because all of the water there has been could nevertheless be superheated steam in a stormy atmosphere of sulphurous and metallic vapours. Beneath this will swirl and boil an ocean of molten rock substance. Across a sky of fiery clouds the glare of the hurrying sun and moon could sweep rapidly like hot breaths of flame.

7

A

DARK NEBULA

A DARK NEBULA

Taken in 1920 with the aid of the biggest telescope inside the international. One of the primary photographs taken by the Mount Wilson telescope.

There are dark nebulae and brilliant nebulae. Prof. Henry Norris Russell, against the British principle, holds that the darkish nebulae preceded the intense nebulae.

Photo: Prof. Hale

Slowly by using levels as a million of years observed some other, this fiery scene could lose its eruptive incandescence. The vapours within the sky could rain down and grow to be much less dense overhead; excellent slaggy cakes of solidifying rock might appear upon the floor of the molten sea, and sink underneath it, to be replaced with the aid of different floating hundreds. The solar and moon developing now each extra remote and every smaller, might rush with diminishing swiftness throughout the heavens. The moon now, because of its smaller length, would be already cooled a ways below incandescence, and would be alternately obstructing and reflecting the daylight in a sequence of eclipses and complete moons.

ANOTHER SPIRAL NEBULA

ANOTHER SPIRAL NEBULA

Photo: G. W. Ritchey

9

And so with a wonderful slowness via the vastness of time, the earth could grow increasingly more just like the earth on which we stay, till at remaining an age could come whilst, inside the cooling air, steam would begin to condense into clouds, and the first rain might fall hissing upon the first rocks under. For countless millenia the extra part of the earth's water might nevertheless be vaporized inside the atmosphere, however there might now be hot streams going for walks over the crystallizing rocks underneath and pools and lakes into which these streams could be wearing detritus and depositing sediment.

LANDSCAPE BEFORE LIFE

LANDSCAPE BEFORE LIFE

“Great lava-like loads of rock with out lines of soil”

At remaining a circumstance of things must had been attained in which a man may have stood up on earth and seemed about him and lived. If we could have visited the earth at that point we need to have stood on super lava-like loads of rock with out a trace of soil or contact of dwelling plant life, under a typhoon-rent sky. Hot and violent winds, exceeding the fiercest tornado that ever blows, and downpours of rain consisting of our milder, slower earth to-day is aware of not anything of, would possibly have assailed us. The water of the downpour could have rushed by using us, muddy with the spoils of the rocks, coming together into torrents, slicing deep gorges and canyons as they hurried beyond to deposit their sediment inside the earliest seas. Through the clouds we have to have glimpsed a incredible sun shifting visibly throughout the sky, and in its wake and inside the wake of the moon would have come a diurnal tide of earthquake and upheaval. And 10the moon, which in recent times maintains one consistent face to earth, might then have been rotating visibly and showing the aspect it now hides so inexorably.

The earth aged. One million years followed some other, and the day lengthened, the solar grew greater distant and milder, the moon's pace in the sky slackened; the intensity of rain and typhoon diminished and the water within the first seas improved and ran collectively into the sea garment our planet henceforth wore.

But there has been no lifestyles as but upon the earth; the seas had been dead, and the rocks have been barren.

Eleven

III

THE BEGINNINGS OF LIFE

AS all and sundry knows these days, the expertise we possess of existence earlier than the beginnings of human reminiscence and culture is derived from the markings and fossils of dwelling matters inside the stratified rocks. We find preserved in shale and slate, limestone, and sandstone, bones, shells, fibres, stems, end result, footmarks, scratchings etc, side through aspect with the ripple marks of the earliest tides and the pittings of the earliest rain-falls. It is by way of the sedulous examination of this Record of the Rocks that the beyond records of the earth's life has been pieced together. That a great deal nearly everybody knows to-day. The sedimentary rocks do now not lie well stratum above stratum; they had been crumpled, bent, thrust about, distorted and mixed together like the leaves of a library that has been time and again looted and burnt, and it's far most effective as a result of many committed lifetimes of labor that the document has been put into order and read. The complete compass of time represented by means of the report of the rocks is now anticipated as 1,600,000,000 years.

The earliest rocks inside the report are known as by means of geologists the Azoic rocks, because they display no traces of existence. Great areas of those Azoic rocks lie exposed in North America, and they're of the sort of thickness that geologists keep in mind that they represent a period of as a minimum 1/2 of the 1,600,000,000 which they assign to the complete geological file. Let me repeat this profoundly massive truth. Half the terrific c program languageperiod of time because land and sea were first distinguishable on earth has left us no traces of existence. There are riplings and rain

marks still to be located in those rocks, however no marks nor vestiges of any residing issue.

12

MARINE LIFE IN THE CAMBRIAN PERIOD

MARINE LIFE IN THE CAMBRIAN PERIOD

1 and 8, Jellyfishes; 2, Hyolithes (swimming snail); 3, Humenocaris; four, Protospongia; 5, Lampshells (Obolella); 6, Orthoceras; 7, Trilobite (Paradoxides) — see fossil on web page 13; 9, Coral (Archæocyathus); 10, Bryograptus; 11, Trilobite (Olenellus); 12, Palesterina

Then, as we come up the document, signs and symptoms of past lifestyles seem and boom. The age of the sector's records wherein we find these past 13 traces is referred to as by means of geologists the Lower Palæozoic age. The first warning signs that life changed into astir are vestiges of relatively easy and lowly matters: the shells of small shellfish, the stems and flowerlike heads of zoophytes, seaweeds and the tracks and stays of sea worms and crustacea. Very early appear certain creatures alternatively like plant-lice, crawling creatures that may roll themselves up into balls because the plant-lice do, the trilobites. Later via a few million years or so come certain sea scorpions, extra cell and powerful creatures than the arena had ever visible before.

FOSSIL TRILOBITE (SLIGHTLY MAGNIFIED)

FOSSIL TRILOBITE (SLIGHTLY MAGNIFIED)

Photo: John J. Ward, F.E.S.

None of those creatures were of very terrific size. Among the biggest had been sure of the sea scorpions, which measured nine toes in duration. There are no signs and symptoms something of land existence of any kind, plant or animal; there aren't any fishes nor any vertebrated creatures on this part of the record. Essentially all the flora and creatures which have

left us their traces from this era of the earth's records are shallow-water and intertidal beings. If we wanted to parallel the plants and fauna of the Lower Palaeozoic rocks in the world to-day, we need to do it first-rate, besides inside the remember of length, through taking a drop of water from a rock pool or scummy ditch and inspecting it beneath a microscope. The little crustacea, the small shellfish, the zoophytes and algæ we need to discover there could display a pretty placing resemblance to those clumsier, larger prototypes that once had been the crown of lifestyles upon our planet.

EARLY PALÆOLITHIC FOSSILS OF VARIOUS SPECIES OF

LINGULA

EARLY PALÆOLITHIC FOSSILS OF VARIOUS SPECIES OF LINGULA

Species of this most ancient genus of shellfish nonetheless stay to-day

(In Natural History Museum, London)

It is properly, however, to bear in thoughts that the Lower Palaeozoic rocks in all likelihood do not provide us anything in any respect consultant of the primary beginnings of existence on our planet. Unless a creature has bones 14 or different tough elements, unless it wears a shell or is big enough and heavy sufficient to make characteristic footprints and trails in mud, it's far unlikely to go away any fossilized strains of its life in the back of. To-day there are loads of thousands of species of small smooth-bodied creatures in our international which it's miles improbable can ever depart any mark for future geologists to discover. In the arena's beyond, millions of millions of species of such creatures might also have lived and elevated and flourished and handed away without a hint closing. The waters of the nice and cozy and shallow lakes and seas of the so-called Azoic length might also have teemed with an countless range 15 of lowly, jelly-like, shell-less and

boneless creatures, and a mess of inexperienced scummy flora may additionally have unfold over the sunlit intertidal rocks and beaches. The Record of the Rocks is not any more a complete document of lifestyles inside the beyond than the books of a bank are a record of the existence of all people within the neighbourhood. It is most effective while a species begins to secrete a shell or a spicule or a carapace or a lime-supported stem, and so positioned through some thing for the destiny, that it goes upon the Record. But in rocks of an age previous to the ones which endure any fossil strains, graphite, a shape of uncombined carbon, is every so often observed, and a few authorities recollect that it could had been separated out from mixture through the crucial sports of unknown residing things.

FOSSILIZED FOOTPRINTS OF A LABYRINTHODONT CHEIROTHERIUM

FOSSILIZED FOOTPRINTS OF A LABYRINTHODONT CHEIROTHERIUM

(In Natural History Museum, London)

16

IV

THE AGE OF FISHES

IN the days whilst the world changed into purported to have persisted for just a few thousand years, it became intended that the different species of plant life and animals were constant and final; they'd all been created precisely as they are to-day, each species through itself. But as men commenced to discover and examine the Record of the Rocks this perception gave location to the suspicion that many species had changed and advanced slowly through the path of a while, and this once

more improved right into a perception in what is known as Organic Evolution, a belief that each one species of lifestyles upon earth, animal and vegetable alike, are descended with the aid of slow non-stop procedures of exchange from some quite simple ancestral form of lifestyles, a few almost structureless living substance, some distance back inside the so-referred to as Azoic seas.

This query of Organic Evolution, just like the question of the age of the earth, has within the past been the subject of plenty sour controversy. There was a time while a perception in organic evolution become for as a substitute difficult to understand motives imagined to be incompatible with sound Christian, Jewish and Moslem doctrine. That time has handed, and the guys of the maximum orthodox Catholic, Protestant, Jewish and Mohammedan notion are now loose to just accept this more moderen and broader view of a commonplace foundation of all living things. No lifestyles seems to have occurred suddenly upon earth. Life grew and grows. Age with the aid of age via gulfs of time at which creativeness reels, life has been growing from a mere stirring in the intertidal slime in the direction of freedom, power and awareness.

Life consists of people. These individuals are definite things, they're no longer like the lumps and masses, nor even the infinite and motionless crystals, of non-living matter, and that they have two characteristics no lifeless remember possesses. They can assimilate other remember into themselves and make it a part of themselves, and 17they could reproduce themselves. They devour and they breed. They can supply upward push to different people, for the most part like themselves, but usually additionally a little different from themselves. There is a particular and own family resemblance among an individual and its offspring, and there may be an individual difference among each figure and each offspring it produces, and this is real in each species and at every level of life.

SPECIMEN OF THE PTERICHTHYS MILLERI OR SEA SCORPION

SHOWING BODY ARMOUR

SPECIMEN OF THE PTERICHTHYS MILLERI OR SEA SCORPION SHOWING BODY ARMOUR

Now medical men aren't able to explain to us either why offspring must resemble nor why they have to range from their dad and mom. But considering offspring do right now resemble and vary, it is a count instead of not unusual experience than of scientific understanding that, if the conditions below which a species live are modified, the species need to undergo some correlated modifications. Because in any era of the species there need to be a number of people whose person differences make them higher tailored to the brand new situations beneath which the species has to stay, and more than a few whose individuals whose man or woman differences make it as a substitute more difficult for them to stay. And on the complete the former kind will stay longer, endure extra offspring, and reproduce themselves more abundantly than the latter, and so technology by means of era the average of the species will alternate within the favourable course. This technique, that is known as Natural Selection, isn't always so much a systematic concept as a necessary deduction from the facts of reproduction and person distinction. There can be many forces at work various, destroying and keeping species, about which science may additionally still be unaware or not sure, but the guy who can deny the operation of this system of herbal selection upon lifestyles because its beginning have to be both unaware of the fundamental information of lifestyles or incapable of everyday idea.

Many scientific guys have speculated about the primary starting of life and their speculations are regularly of wonderful hobby, however there may be actually no precise

know-how and no convincing bet yet of the manner wherein existence began. But nearly all government are agreed that it probably started out upon dust or sand in warm sunlit shallow brackish water, and that it spread up the seashores to the intertidal lines and out to the open waters.

FOSSIL OF THE CLADOSELACHE, A DEVONIAN SHARK

FOSSIL OF THE CLADOSELACHE, A DEVONIAN SHARK

Nat. Hist. Mus.

That early international turned into a world of sturdy tides and currents. An incessant destruction of people have to have been going on through their being swept up the beaches and dried, or via their being swept out to sea and sinking down out of reach of air and sun. Early conditions favoured the improvement of every tendency to root and preserve on, every tendency to shape an outer skin and casing to protect the stranded person from immediately desiccation. From the very earliest any tendency to sensitiveness to flavor could turn the character in the route of food, and any sensitiveness to mild could assist it to war lower back out of the darkness of the sea deeps and caverns or to wriggle again out of the excessive glare of the dangerous shallows.

Probably the first shells and body armour of residing things were protections towards drying in place of against active enemies. But teeth and claw come early into our earthly records.

We have already stated the dimensions of the earlier water scorpions. For lengthy ages such creatures had been the best lords of life. Then 19in a department of those Palæozoic rocks referred to as the Silurian department, which many geologists now suppose to be as vintage as five hundred million years,

there appears a brand new kind of being, geared up with eyes and enamel and swimming powers of an altogether more effective kind. These have been the primary recognized backboned animals, the earliest fishes, the first recognized Vertebrata.

SHARKS AND GANOIDS OF THE DEVONIAN PERIOD

SHARKS AND GANOIDS OF THE DEVONIAN PERIOD

By Alice Woodward

These fishes boom significantly within the next department of rocks, the rocks called the Devonian gadget. They are so usual that this period of the Record of the Rocks has been referred to as the Age of 20Fishes. Fishes of a pattern now long gone from the earth, and fishes allied to the sharks and sturgeons of to-day, rushed via the waters, leapt inside the air, browsed among the seaweeds, pursued and preyed upon each other, and gave a brand new liveliness to the waters of the world. None of those have been excessively large through our gift standards. Few of them were more than two or three toes lengthy, but there were extraordinary forms which had been so long as twenty toes.

We recognize not anything from geology of the ancestors of those fishes. They do not seem like related to any of the bureaucracy that preceded them. Zoologists have the most interesting views in their ancestry, but these they derive from the observe of the development of the eggs in their nonetheless residing members of the family, and from other resources. Apparently the ancestors of the vertebrata had been soft-bodied and perhaps quite small swimming creatures who started out first to expand difficult parts as teeth spherical and approximately their mouths. The teeth of a skate or dogfish cover the roof and floor of its mouth and pass at the lip into the flattened toothlike scales that encase most of its body. As the fishes expand these tooth scales inside the geological

record, they swim out of the hidden darkness of the beyond into the mild, the first vertebrated animals seen within the file.

21

V

THE AGE OF THE COAL SWAMPS

THE land at some stage in this Age of Fishes turned into reputedly pretty useless. Crags and uplands of barren rock lay beneath the sun and rain. There changed into no real soil—for as yet there have been no earthworms which help to make a soil, and no plant life to break up the rock debris into mold; there has been no trace of moss or lichen. Life turned into nonetheless most effective in the sea.

Over this global of barren rock performed wonderful adjustments of weather. The reasons of these adjustments of weather had been very complicated and that they have nonetheless to be properly anticipated. The changing shape of the earth's orbit, the slow shifting of the poles of rotation, changes in the shapes of the continents, probable even fluctuations in the warm temperature of the solar, now conspired to plunge extremely good regions of the earth's surface into lengthy durations of bloodless and ice and now once more for thousands and thousands of years spread a heat or equable weather over this planet. There appear to have been levels of top notch inner pastime within the global's records, when in the route of a few million years collected upthrusts might get away in traces of volcanic eruption and upheaval and rearrange the mountain and continental outlines of the globe, growing the intensity of the ocean and the height of the mountains and exaggerating the extremes of climate. And these might be accompanied with the aid of considerable a long time of comparative quiescence, while frost, rain and

river might wear down the mountain heights and bring amazing masses of silt to fill and raise the ocean bottoms and unfold the seas, ever shallower and wider, over an increasing number of of the land. There had been “excessive and deep” ages inside the global’s history and “low and stage” a while. The reader have to disregard from his thoughts any idea that the floor of the earth has been developing steadily cooler due to the fact its crust grew solid. After that a good deal cooling had been accomplished, the inner temperature ceased to have an effect on floor 22conditions. There are traces of intervals of superabundant ice and snow, of “Glacial Ages,” this is, even within the Azoic length.

It changed into handiest toward the near of the Age of Fishes, in a length of good sized shallow seas and lagoons, that lifestyles spread itself out in any successful way from the waters on to the land. No doubt the earlier styles of the forms that now begin to appear in extraordinary abundance had already been growing in a unprecedented and obscure manner for plenty ratings of tens of millions of years. But now got here their opportunity.

A CARBONIFEROUS SWAMP

A CARBONIFEROUS SWAMP

A Coal Seam in the Making

Plants no question preceded animal forms in this invasion of the land, but the animals in all likelihood followed up the plant emigration 23very carefully. The first problem that the plant needed to solve became the trouble of a few sustaining stiff support to hold up its fronds to the sunlight whilst the buoyant water turned into withdrawn; the second changed into the hassle of getting water from the swampy floor underneath to the tissues of the plant, now that it changed into not close to hand. The two problems were solved via the development of woody tissue which each sustained the plant and acted as

water carrier to the leaves. The Record of the Rocks is all at once crowded by using a significant type of woody swamp plants, many of them of excellent length, huge tree mosses, tree ferns, tremendous horsetails and the like. And with these, age with the aid of age, there crawled out of the water a remarkable kind of animal forms. There were centipedes and millipedes; there have been the primary primitive bugs; there have been creatures associated with the historic king crabs and sea scorpions which have become the earliest spiders and land scorpions, and currently there were vertebrated animals.

SKULL OF A LABYRINTHODONT, CAPITOSAURUS

SKULL OF A LABYRINTHODONT, CAPITOSAURUS

Nat. Hist. Mus.

Some of the earlier insects were very massive. There had been dragon flies in this era with wings that unfold out to twenty-nine inches.

In numerous ways those new orders and genera had tailored themselves to respiration air. Hitherto all animals had breathed air dissolved in water, and that indeed is what all animals nevertheless must do. But now in divers models the animal kingdom turned into obtaining the power of presenting its very own moisture wherein it changed into needed. A man with a wonderfully dry lung could suffocate to-day; his lung surfaces must be wet simply so air may bypass thru them into his blood. The adaptation to air respiration is composed in all cases both in the improvement of a cowl to the old skool gills to prevent evaporation, or within the development of tubes or other new respiratory organs mendacity deep within the frame and moistened via a watery secretion. The old gills with which the ancestral fish of the vertebrated line had breathed have been inadaptable to respiratory upon land, and within the case of this division of the animal nation it is the swimming bladder of the fish which becomes a brand new, deep-seated breathing

organ, the lung. The sort of animals known as amphibia, the frogs and newts of to-day, start their lives inside the water and breathe via gills; and subsequently the lung, growing within the same manner because the swimming bladder of many fishes do, as a baglike outgrowth from the throat, takes over the commercial enterprise of breathing, the animal comes out on land, and the gills dwindle and the gill slits disappear. (All except an outgrowth of one gill slit, which will become the passage of the ear and ear-drum.) The animal can now stay best within the air, but it need to go back as a minimum to the brink of the water to lay its eggs and reproduce its type.

SKELETON OF A LABYRINTHODONT: THE ERYOPS

SKELETON OF A LABYRINTHODONT: THE ERYOPS

Nat. Hist. Mus.

All the air-respiration vertebrata of this age of swamps and flora belonged to the magnificence amphibia. They were nearly all of them bureaucracy associated with the newts of to-day, and a number of them attained a substantial length. They have been land animals, it's far genuine, however they had been land animals wanting to stay in and near moist and swampy places, and all the amazing timber of this era were equally 25amphibious of their conduct. None of them had but advanced fruits and seeds of a kind that could fall on land and increase with the assist best of such moisture as dew and rain could bring. They all had to shed their spores in water, it would seem, if they have been to germinate.

It is one of the most stunning hobbies of that lovely science, comparative anatomy, to trace the complicated and first rate variations of residing things to the necessities of life in air. All dwelling matters, plant life and animals alike, are by and large water matters. For example all the better vertebrated animals above the fishes, as much as and such as man, skip via a stage in their improvement inside the egg or before birth in which

they have gill slits which might be obliterated earlier than the younger emerge. The naked, water-washed eye of the fish is blanketed in the better paperwork from drying up with the aid of eyelids and glands which secrete moisture. The weaker sound vibrations of air necessitate an ear-drum. In nearly each organ of the frame similar modifications and variations are to be detected, similar patchings-up to fulfill aerial situations.

This Carboniferous age, this age of the amphibia, was an age of lifestyles within the swamps and lagoons and at the low banks amongst these waters. Thus some distance existence had now extended. The hills and high lands were nonetheless pretty barren and dead. Life had learnt to respire air indeed, however it still had its roots in its native water; it nonetheless needed to go back to the water to breed its type.

26

VI

THE AGE OF REPTILES

THE considerable lifestyles of the Carboniferous period changed into succeeded by a vast cycle of dry and bitter ages. They are represented within the Record of the Rocks by way of thick deposits of sandstones and so on, in which fossils are comparatively few. The temperature of the world fluctuated broadly, and there were long periods of glacial bloodless. Over first rate regions the previous profusion of swamp plants ceased, and, overlaid via those more recent deposits, it started out that procedure of compression and mineralization that gave the sector most of the coal deposits of to-day.

But it's far at some stage in periods of exchange that life undergoes its maximum rapid modifications, and beneath complication that it learns its toughest classes. As situations revert closer to warmth and moisture again we discover a new series of animal and plant forms established, We discover inside the report the remains of vertebrated animals that laid eggs which, as opposed to hatching out tadpoles which had to stay for a time in water, carried on their development earlier than hatching to a degree so almost like the person shape that the younger should live in air from the primary moment of impartial existence. Gills had been reduce out altogether, and the gill slits only seemed as an embryonic phase.

These new creatures with out a tadpole stage have been the Reptiles. Concurrently there were a development of seed-bearing timber, which could unfold their seed, independently of swamp or lakes. There were now palmlike cycads and many tropical conifers, even though as but there had been no flowering flora and no grasses. There changed into a amazing wide variety of ferns. And there has been now additionally an expanded sort of bugs. There were beetles, although bees and butterflies had but to come. But all the fundamental kinds of a new real land fauna and flora have been laid down all through those full-size ages of severity. 27This new land life needed handiest the possibility of beneficial conditions to flourish and be triumphant.

A FOSSIL ICHTHYOSAURUS, A MESOZOIC FISH-LIZARD

A FOSSIL ICHTHYOSAURUS, A MESOZOIC FISH-LIZARD

Found within the Lower Lias in Somersetshire

Nat. Hist. Mus.

Age by way of age and with abundant fluctuations that mitigation got here. The nonetheless incalculable actions of

the earth's crust, the adjustments in its orbit, the increase and diminution of the mutual inclination of orbit and pole, labored together to produce a top notch spell of extensively subtle heat conditions. The length lasted altogether, it's miles now intended, upwards of hundred million years. It is known as the Mesozoic duration, to distinguish it from the altogether vaster Palæozoic and Azoic periods (collectively fourteen hundred tens of millions) that preceded it, and from the Cainozoic or new existence duration that intervened among its close and the prevailing time, and it's also referred to as the Age of Reptiles due to the astonishing predominance and variety of this form of lifestyles. It came to an cease some eighty million years ago.

In the arena to-day the genera of Reptiles are comparatively few and their distribution is very restricted. They are extra diverse, it is genuine, than are the few surviving participants of the order of the amphibia which once within the Carboniferous length dominated the world. We still have the snakes, the turtles and tortoises (the Chelonia), the alligators and crocodiles, and the lizards. Without exception they're creatures requiring warmth all the year round; they can not stand exposure to bloodless, and it is in all likelihood that each one the reptilian beings of the Mesozoic suffered underneath the equal problem. It was a hothouse fauna, dwelling amidst a hothouse plant life. It persisted no frosts. But the sector had as a minimum attained a actual dry land fauna and vegetation as outstanding from the dust and swamp fauna and flowers of the preceding heyday of lifestyles upon earth.

A PTERODACTYL

A PTERODACTYL

Nat. Hist. Mus.

All the varieties of reptile we recognize now were a great deal more abundantly represented then, extraordinary turtles and

tortoises, massive crocodiles and lots of lizards and snakes, however in addition there was some of series of wonderful creatures that have now vanished altogether from the earth. There became a huge variety of beings known as the Dinosaurs. Vegetation became now spreading over the lower ranges of the sector, reeds, brakes of fern and so forth; and browsing upon this abundance came a mess of herbivorous reptiles, which increased in size because the Mesozoic length rose to its climax. Some of those beasts passed in length some other land animals which have ever lived; they had been as large as whales. The Diplodocus Carnegii as an instance measured 80-four toes from snout to tail; the Gigantosaurus became even more; it measured one hundred feet. Living upon those monsters become a swarm of carnivorous Dinosaurs of a corresponding size. One of these, the Tyrannosaurus, is figured and defined in many books because the remaining phrase in reptilian frightfulness.

29

A BIG SWAMP-INHABITING DINOSAUR, THE
DIPLODOCUS, OVER EIGHTY
FEET FROM SNOUT TO TAIL-TIP

A BIG SWAMP-INHABITING DINOSAUR, THE
DIPLODOCUS, OVER EIGHTY FEET FROM SNOUT TO
TAIL-TIP

Nat. Hist. Mus.

While those incredible creatures pastured and pursued amidst the fronds and evergreens of the Mesozoic jungles, some other now vanished tribe of reptiles, with a bat-like development of the fore limbs, pursued bugs and each other, first leapt and parachuted and presently flew amidst the fronds and branches of the woodland trees. These have been the Pterodactyls. These have been the primary flying creatures with backbones; they mark a new achievement in the growing powers of vertebrated lifestyles.

Moreover some of the reptiles were returning to the sea waters. Three organizations of massive swimming beings had invaded the sea from which their ancestors had come: the Mososaurs, the Plesiosaurs, and Ichthyosaurs. Some of these again approached the proportions of our present whales. The Ichthyosaurs appear to had been pretty seagoing creatures, but the Plesiosaurs were a kind of animal that has no cognate form to-day. The body was stout and huge with paddles, tailored either for swimming or crawling thru marshes, or along the lowest of shallow waters. The relatively small 30head became poised on a sizeable snake of neck, altogether outdoing the neck of the swan. Either the Plesiosaur swam and looked for meals under the water and fed as the swan will do, or it lurked underneath water and snatched at passing fish or beast.

Such become the fundamental land life at some point of the Mesozoic age. It was via our human requirements an strengthen upon something that had preceded it. It had produced land animals greater in size, variety, energy and hobby, greater “important” as humans say, than something the arena had seen earlier than. In the seas there have been no such develop but a exceptional proliferation of latest sorts of existence. An giant kind of squid-like creatures with chambered shells, for the most part coiled, had appeared within the shallow seas, the Ammonites. They had had predecessors inside the Palæozoic seas, but now was their age of glory. To-day they have got left no survivors in any respect; their nearest relation is the pearly Nautilus, an inhabitant of tropical waters. And a brand new and more prolific form of fish with lighter, finer scales than the plate-like and enamel-like coverings that had hitherto prevailed, became and has given that remained most important inside the seas and rivers.

VII

THE FIRST BIRDS AND THE FIRST MAMMALS

IN a few paragraphs a image of the lush plant life and swarming reptiles of that first fantastic summer season of existence, the Mesozoic duration, has been sketched. But while the Dinosaurs lorded it over the recent selvas and marshy plains and the Pterodactyls crammed the forests with their flutterings and possibly with shrieks and croakings as they pursued the buzzing insect life of the still flowerless shrubs and trees, some much less conspicuous and less considerable paperwork upon the margins of this abounding lifestyles have been acquiring certain powers and learning certain instructions of persistence, that had been to be of the maximum fee to their race while at closing the smiling generosity of solar and earth started out to fade.

A institution of tribes and genera of hopping reptiles, small creatures of the dinosaur kind, seem to were driven via competition and the pursuit in their enemies closer to the options of extinction or variation to chillier conditions inside the higher hills or via the ocean. Among those distressed tribes there has been evolved a brand new sort of scale—scales that were elongated into quill-like forms and that presently branched into the crude beginnings of feathers. These quill-like scales layover one another and fashioned a warmth-maintaining covering greater green than any reptilian overlaying that had hitherto existed. So they accepted an invasion of chillier areas that have been otherwise uninhabited. Perhaps concurrently with these adjustments there arose in those creatures a greater solicitude for his or her eggs. Most reptiles are seemingly pretty careless approximately their eggs, which are left for solar and season to hatch. But a number of the sorts upon this new department of the tree of life had been obtaining a habit of guarding their eggs and preserving them warm with the warm temperature in their our bodies.

With these diversifications to bloodless different inner adjustments 32 have been taking place that made those creatures, the primitive birds, heat-blooded and independent of basking. The very earliest birds appear to were seabirds living upon fish, and their fore limbs have been now not wings however paddles instead after the penguin kind. That above all primitive hen, the New Zealand Ki-Wi, has feathers of a completely easy type, and neither flies nor seems to be descended from flying ancestors. In the development of the birds, feathers came before wings. But once the feather became developed the possibility of making a mild unfold of feathers led necessarily to the wing. We understand of the fossil stays of 1 chook as a minimum which had reptilian teeth in its jaw and an extended reptilian tail, but which additionally had a true chook's wing and which without a doubt flew and held its very own the various pterodactyls of the Mesozoic time. Nevertheless birds had been neither numerous nor abundant in Mesozoic instances. If a man may want to move lower back to normal Mesozoic united states, he would possibly stroll for days and in no way see or hear one of these element as a chicken, though he might see a outstanding abundance of pterodactyls and insects a number of the fronds and reeds.

FOSSIL OF THE ARCHEOPTERYX; ONE OF THE EARLIEST BIRDS

FOSSIL OF THE ARCHEOPTERYX; ONE OF THE EARLIEST BIRDS

Nat. Hist. Mus.

And another issue he might probably in no way see, and that might be any sign of a mammal. Probably the primary mammals had been in 33 life hundreds of thousands of years before the primary component one could call a fowl, however they were altogether too small and difficult to understand and far off for interest.

HESPERORNIS IN ITS NATIVE SEAS

HESPERORNIS IN ITS NATIVE SEAS

The earliest mammals, just like the earliest birds, have been creatures pushed with the aid of competition and pursuit into a existence of hassle and model to cold. With them additionally the dimensions have become quill-like, and was evolved into a warmness-keeping protecting; and they too underwent modifications, similar in kind even though different in detail, to become warm-blooded and independent of basking. Instead of feathers they advanced hairs, and in preference to guarding and incubating their eggs they saved them heat and secure through preserving them internal their bodies till they have been nearly mature. Most of them became altogether vivaparous and brought their young into the sector alive. And even after their young had been born they tended to hold a shielding and nutritive affiliation with them. Most 34however now not all mammals to-day have mammæ and suckle their young. Two mammals nonetheless live which lay eggs and that have no longer proper mammæ, though they nourish their younger through a nutritive secretion of the below pores and skin; these are the duck-billed platypus and the echidna. The echidna lays leathery eggs and then places them into a pouch below its belly, and so consists of them approximately warm and secure till they hatch.

But just as a traveller to the Mesozoic global would possibly have looked for days and weeks before locating a hen, so, except he knew exactly where to move and look, he may have searched in useless for any lines of a mammal. Both birds and mammals would have appeared very eccentric and secondary and unimportant creatures in Mesozoic times.

THE KI-WI, APTERYX, STILL FOUND IN NEW ZEALAND

THE KI-WI, APTERYX, STILL FOUND IN NEW ZEALAND

Photo: Autotype Fine Art Co.

35

SLAB OF LOWER PLIOCENE MARL

SLAB OF LOWER PLIOCENE MARL

Discovered in Greece; it's miles rich in fossilized bones of early mammals

The Age of Reptiles lasted, it is now guessed, eighty million years. Had any quasi-human intelligence been watching the world thru that inconceivable duration of time, how secure and eternal the light and abundance need to have seemed, how assured the wallowing prosperity of the dinosaurs and the flapping abundance of the flying lizards! And then the mysterious rhythms and amassing forces of the universe commenced to turn towards that quasi-eternal balance. That run of luck 36 for lifestyles turned into running out. Age by age, myriad of years after myriad of years, with halts no question and retrogressions, came a alternate toward problem and extreme situations, got here top notch changes of level and awesome redistributions of mountain and sea. We locate one factor in the Record of the Rocks during the decadence of the lengthy Mesozoic age of prosperity that is very large of steadily sustained adjustments of situation, and that is a violent fluctuation of dwelling forms and the appearance of recent and peculiar species. Under the collection threat of extinction the older orders and genera are showing their utmost potential for version and model. The Ammonites for instance in these last pages of the Mesozoic chapter exhibit a large number of notable forms. Under settled conditions there's no encouragement for novelties; they do no longer broaden, they are suppressed; what is high-quality tailored is already there. Under novel situations it's miles the everyday kind that suffers, and the newness that may have a higher hazard to live to tell the tale and set up itself. ...

There comes a spoil in the Record of the Rocks which can constitute numerous million years. There is a veil here nonetheless, over even the outline of the history of life. When it lifts again, the Age of Reptiles is at an stop; the Dinosaurs, the Plesiosaurs and Ichthyosaurs, the Pterodactyls, the innumerable genera and species of Ammonite have all long gone surely. In all their stupendous variety they have died out and left no descendants. The cold has killed them. All their very last versions were insufficient; that they had by no means stumble on survival situations. The global had surpassed via a section of excessive conditions past their powers of endurance, a sluggish and complete massacre of Mesozoic life has come about, and we find now a new scene, a new and hardier plants, and a brand new and hardier fauna in possession of the world.

It continues to be a bleak and impoverished scene with which this new quantity of the e-book of existence starts. The cycads and tropical conifers have given region very largely to bushes that shed their leaves to keep away from destruction through the snows of winter and to flowering vegetation and shrubs, and wherein there has been previously a large quantity of reptiles, an growing kind of birds and mammals is moving into their inheritance.

37

VIII

THE AGE OF MAMMALS

THE commencing of the next brilliant length in the existence of the earth, the Cainozoic length, became a period of upheaval and excessive volcanic activity. Now it become that the large hundreds of the Alps and Himalayas and the

mountain backbone of the Rockies and Andes had been thrust up, and that the impolite outlines of our gift oceans and continents regarded. The map of the sector starts offevolved to show a primary dim resemblance to the map of to-day. It is expected now that among forty and eighty million years have elapsed from the beginnings of the Cainozoic period to the present time.

At the outset of the Cainozoic length the weather of the arena became austere. It grew typically warmer until a clean segment of fantastic abundance changed into reached, after which conditions grew tough again and the earth passed into a chain of extraordinarily cold cycles, the Glacial Ages, from which reputedly it's miles now slowly emerging.

But we do not understand sufficient of the causes of climatic exchange at present to forecast the viable fluctuations of climatic conditions that lie earlier than us. We can be moving towards increasing sunshine or lapsing closer to another glacial age; volcanic activity and the upheaval of mountain masses can be increasing or diminishing; we do not know; we lack sufficient technological know-how.

With the opening of this period the grasses seem; for the first time there may be pasture within the global; and with the full improvement of the once obscure mammalian kind, appear some of interesting grazing animals and of carnivorous types which prey upon these.

At first those early mammals seem to differ best in some characters from the brilliant herbivorous and carnivorous reptiles that a while before had flourished after which vanished from the earth. A 38careless observer might assume that during this 2d long age of warmth and lots that changed into now beginning, nature became simply repeating the primary,

with herbivorous and carnivorous mammals to parallel the herbivorous and carnivorous dinosaurs, with birds replacing pterodactyls and so forth. But this would be an altogether superficial contrast. The sort of the universe is countless and constant; it progresses eternally; records never repeats itself and no parallels are exactly actual. The variations between the existence of the Cainozoic and Mesozoic durations are a ways profounder than the resemblances.

A MAMMAL OF THE EARLY CAINOZOIC PERIOD

A MAMMAL OF THE EARLY CAINOZOIC PERIOD

The Titanotherum (Brontops) Robustum

The most essential of these kind of variations lies in the mental life of the two periods. It arises basically out of the persevering with touch of discern and offspring which distinguishes mammalian and in a lesser diploma chicken lifestyles, from the lifestyles of the reptile. With only a few exceptions the reptile abandons its egg to hatch on my own. The younger reptile has no know-how whatever of its determine; its intellectual existence, such as it is, starts and ends with its own experiences. 39It may also tolerate the existence of its fellows however it has no conversation with them; it by no means imitates, never learns from them, is incapable of concerted motion with them. Its lifestyles is that of an isolated person. But with the suckling and cherishing of young which was extraordinary of the brand new mammalian and avian lines arose the opportunity of getting to know by means of imitation, of conversation, through warning cries and different concerted movement, of mutual manage and education. A teachable type of existence had come into the world.

The earliest mammals of the Cainozoic period are but little advanced in brain length to the more energetic carnivorous dinosaurs, however as we examine on thru the record closer to

current times we discover, in each tribe and race of the mammalian animals, a steady general growth in mind ability. For instance we find at a relatively early degree that rhinoceros-like beasts seem. There is a creature, the Titanotherium, which lived inside the earliest department of this era. It became in all likelihood much like a contemporary rhinoceros in its behavior and wishes. But its mind capacity became not one tenth that of its residing successor.

The in advance mammals possibly parted from their offspring as quickly as suckling changed into over, however, as soon as the ability for mutual knowledge has arisen, the benefits of persevering with the association are very extraordinary; and we presently locate some of mammalian species displaying the beginnings of a true social lifestyles and keeping together in herds, packs and flocks, watching each other, imitating each different, taking warning from every other's acts and cries. This is something that the sector had not visible earlier than amongst vertebrated animals. Reptiles and fish may no doubt be located in swarms and shoals; they were hatched in quantities and comparable situations have kept them collectively, but within the case of the social and gregarious mammals the association arises no longer absolutely from a network of external forces, it's miles sustained by using an inner impulse. They are not merely like each other and so found inside the identical locations on the identical times; they prefer one another and in order that they preserve collectively.⁴⁰

STENOMYLUS HITCHCOCKI—A GIRAFFE-CAMEL

STENOMYLUS HITCHCOCKI—A GIRAFFE-CAMEL

Nat. Hist. Mus.

SKELETON OF PROTOHIPPIUS VENTICOLUS—EARLY HORSE

SKELETON OF PROTOHIPPIUS VENTICOLUS—EARLY HORSE

Nat. Hist. Mus.

This difference among the reptile international and the sector of our human minds is one our sympathies appear not able to pass. We can not conceive in ourselves the swift simple urgency of a reptile's instinctive reasons, its appetites, fears and hates. We forty one can not apprehend them in their simplicity because all our motives are complicated; our's are balances and resultants and no longer easy urgencies. But the mammals and birds have self-restraint and attention for other individuals, a social enchantment, a self- manage this is, at its decrease stage, after our very own fashion. We can in effect establish family members with nearly all sorts of them. When they suffer they utter cries and make actions that rouse our emotions. We could make understanding pets of them with a mutual popularity. They may be tamed to self-restraint towards us, domesticated and taught.

COMPARATIVE SIZES OF BRAINS OF RHINOCEROS AND DINOCERAS

COMPARATIVE SIZES OF BRAINS OF RHINOCEROS AND DINOCERAS

Nat. Hist. Mus.

That unusual boom of mind that is the critical reality of Cainozoic instances marks a brand new communication and interdependence of individuals. It foreshadows the development of human societies of which we shall quickly be telling.

As the Cainozoic period unrolled, the resemblance of its flowers and fauna to the flowers and animals that inhabit the sector to-day 42 improved. The big clumsy Uintatheres and Titanotheres, the Entelodonts and Hyracodons, huge clumsy brutes like not anything residing, disappeared. On the alternative hand a chain of bureaucracy led up via regular tiers from gruesome and clumsy predecessors to the giraffes,

camels, horses, elephants, deer, puppies and lions and tigers of the present global. The evolution of the horse is especially legible upon the geological file. We have a reasonably whole collection of forms from a small tapir-like ancestor inside the early Cainozoic. Another line of improvement that has now been pieced collectively with a few precision is that of the llamas and camels.

43

IX

MONKEYS, APES AND SUB-MEN

NATURALISTS divide the magnificence Mammalia into some of orders. At the top of those is the order Primates, which includes the lemurs, the monkeys, apes and guy. Their class become based totally in the beginning upon anatomical resemblances and took no account of any mental traits.

Now the beyond records of the Primates is one very difficult to decipher inside the geological record. They are for the most part animals which live in forests like the lemurs and monkeys or in bare rocky locations just like the baboons. They are hardly ever drowned and protected up with the aid of sediment, nor are maximum of them very severa species, and so that they do now not determine so in large part a few of the fossils as the ancestors of the horses, camels and so on do. But we know that quite early within the Cainozoic period, that is to mention a few forty million years ago or so, primitive monkeys and lemuroid creatures had regarded, poorer in mind and now not so specialized as their later successors.

The splendid international summer of the center Cainozoic duration drew at closing to an give up. It changed into to

observe those other two splendid summers within the history of life, the summer season of the Coal Swamps and the great summer time of the Age of Reptiles. Once extra the earth spun in the direction of an ice age. The international chilled, grew milder for a time and chilled once more. In the nice and cozy beyond hippopotami had wallowed thru a lush sub-tropical plant life, and a notable tiger with fangs like sabres, the sabre-toothed tiger, had hunted its prey in which now the newshounds of Fleet Street go to and fro. Now got here a bleaker age and nevertheless bleaker a while. A tremendous weeding and extinction of species befell. A woolly rhinoceros, tailored to a cold climate, and the colossal, a big woolly cousin of the elephants, the Arctic musk ox and the reindeer surpassed across the scene. Then century by means of century the Arctic ice cap, the wintry death of the great Ice Age, crept 44southward. In England it got here almost all the way down to the Thames, in America it reached Ohio. There might be warmer spells of a few thousand years and relapses toward a bitterer cold.

Geologists talk of these wintry levels because the First, Second, Third and Fourth Glacial Ages, and of the interludes as Interglacial periods. We stay to-day in a world this is nevertheless impoverished and scarred through that terrible iciness. The First Glacial Age become coming on six hundred,000 years in the past; the Fourth Glacial Age reached its bitterest some fifty thousand years in the past. And it turned into amidst the snows of this long well-known iciness that the first man-like beings lived upon our planet.

A MAMMOTH

A MAMMOTH

By the center Cainozoic duration there have regarded diverse apes with many quasi-human attributes of the jaws and leg bones, but it is most effective as we approach those Glacial Ages that we discover lines of creatures that we are able to

communicate of as “nearly human.” These lines are not bones but implements. In Europe, in deposits of this era, between half of 1,000,000 and 1,000,000 years old, we discover flints forty five and stones which have evidently been chipped intentionally by way of a few accessible creature desirous of hammering, scraping or combating with the sharpened side. These matters have been referred to as “Eoliths” (sunrise stones). In Europe there are no bones nor other remains of the creature which made those items, truly the gadgets themselves. For all the truth we have it may have been a few totally un-human however intelligent monkey. But at Trinil in Java, in accumulations of this age, a piece of a cranium and various enamel and bones have been discovered of a kind of ape man, with a mind case bigger than that of any living apes, which seems to have walked erect. This creature is now known as Pithecanthropus erectus, the walking ape guy, and the little trayful of its bones is the best help our imaginations have as yet in figuring to, ourselves the makers of the Eoliths.

FLINT IMPLEMENTS FOUND IN PILTDOWN REGION

FLINT IMPLEMENTS FOUND IN PILTDOWN REGION

Nat. Hist. Mus.

It isn't always until we come to sands which might be almost a quarter of one million years antique that we discover some other particle of a sub-person. But there are lots of implements, and they are gradually enhancing in best as we study on via the report. They are no longer clumsy Eoliths; they're now shapely instruments made with good sized ability. And they're an awful lot bigger than the same implements afterwards made via authentic guy. Then, in a sandpit at Heidelberg, seems a unmarried quasi-human jaw-bone, a clumsy jaw-bone, actually chinless, far heavier than a true human jaw-bone and narrower, so that it is implausible the creature's tongue may want to have moved approximately for articulate speech. On the strength of this jaw-bone, scientific men think this creature to have been a heavy, nearly human

monster, probably with large limbs and arms, possibly with a thick felt of hair, and they call it the Heidelberg Man.

46

A THEORETICAL RESTORATION OF THE
PITHECANTHROPUS ERECTUS BY

PROF. RUTOT

A THEORETICAL RESTORATION OF THE
PITHECANTHROPUS ERECTUS BY PROF. RUTOT

This jaw-bone is, I think, one of the most tormenting gadgets within the international to our human curiosity. To see it's far like looking through a defective glass into the beyond and catching simply one blurred and tantalizing glimpse of this Thing, shambling thru the grim barren region, clambering to avoid the sabre-toothed tiger, watching the woolly rhinoceros in the woods. Then earlier than we can scrutinize the monster, he vanishes. Yet the soil is littered abundantly with the indestructible implements he chipped out for his uses.

THE HEIDELBERG MAN

THE HEIDELBERG MAN

The Heidelberg Man, as modelled beneath the supervision of Prof. Rutot

Still extra fascinatingly enigmatical are the remains of a creature located at Piltdown in Sussex in a deposit which can suggest an age between 100 and one hundred and fifty thousand years ago, though some authorities would placed those particular remains back in time to earlier than the Heidelberg jaw-bone. Here there forty seven are the remains of a thick sub-human cranium lots larger than any existing ape's, and a chimpanzee-like jaw-bone which might also or might not belong to it, and, further, a bat-shaped piece of elephant bone clearly cautiously manufactured, through which a hole

had seemingly been bored. There is also the thigh-bone of a deer with cuts upon it like a tally. That is all.

THE PILTDOWN SKULL, AS RECONSTRUCTED FROM ORIGINAL FRAGMENT

THE PILTDOWN SKULL, AS RECONSTRUCTED FROM ORIGINAL FRAGMENT

Nat. Hist. Mus.

What type of beast became this creature which sat and bored holes in bones?

Scientific guys have named him Eoanthropus, the Dawn Man. He stands aside from his kindred; a totally exclusive being both from the Heidelberg creature or from any residing ape. No different vestige like him is known. But the gravels and deposits of from 100 thousand years onward are an increasing number of rich in implements of flint and comparable stone. And these implements are no longer rude "Eoliths." The archæologists are currently in a position to differentiate scrapers, borers, knives, darts, throwing stones and hand axes
....

We are drawing very close to to man. In our subsequent section we will ought to describe the strangest of a majority of these precursors of humanity, the Neanderthalers, the guys who were nearly, but not quite, real men.

But it is able to be nicely perhaps to kingdom pretty genuinely here that no scientific guy supposes both of these creatures, the Heidelberg Man or Eoanthropus, to be direct ancestors of the men of to-day. These are, on the closest, related bureaucracy.

X

THE NEANDERTHALER AND THE RHODESIAN MAN

ABOUT fifty or sixty thousand years ago, before the climax of the Fourth Glacial Age, there lived a creature on earth so like a man that until some years in the past its remains had been taken into consideration to be altogether human. We have skulls and bones of it and a fantastic accumulation of the huge implements it made and used. It made fires. It sheltered in caves from the cold. It likely dressed skins kind of and wore them. It changed into proper-surpassed as men are.

Yet now the ethnologists tell us those creatures were no longer true men. They have been of a exclusive species of the equal genus. They had heavy sticking out jaws and exceptional forehead ridges above the eyes and very low foreheads. Their thumbs were no longer opposable to the hands as guys's are; their necks have been so poised that they could not flip back their heads and appearance as much as the sky. They probably slouched along, head down and ahead. Their chinless jaw-bones resemble the Heidelberg jaw-bone and are markedly unlike human jaw-bones. And there were super differences from the human sample of their tooth. Their cheek teeth were extra complex in shape than ours, greater complex and now not much less so; they'd now not the lengthy fangs of our cheek tooth; and also those quasi-guys had not the marked canine (dog enamel) of an normal man or women. The capacity in their skulls become pretty human, but the brain become larger at the back of and lower in front than the human brain. Their highbrow colleges have been in another way arranged. They had been no longer ancestral to the human line. Mentally and bodily they have been upon a distinct line from the human line.

Skulls and bones of this extinct species of guy were found at Neanderthal amongst other places, and from that location these ordinary proto-men have been christened Neanderthal Men, or forty nine Neanderthals. They have to have persisted in Europe for plenty hundreds or even lots of years.

THE NEANDERTHALER, ACCORDING TO PROF.
RUTOT

THE NEANDERTHALER, ACCORDING TO PROF.
RUTOT

At that point the climate and geography of our international was very distinctive from what they may be at the prevailing time. Europe for instance became protected with ice attaining as far south because the Thames and into Central Germany and Russia; there was no Channel separating Britain from France; the Mediterranean and the Red Sea were incredible valleys, with perhaps a series of lakes of their deeper portions, and a notable inland sea unfold from the existing Black Sea throughout South Russia and far into Central Asia. Spain and all of Europe now not without a doubt underneath ice consisted of bleak uplands under a more difficult climate than that of Labrador, and it was only when North Africa become reached that one could have located a temperate weather. Across the cold steppes of Southern Europe with its sparse arctic vegetation, drifted such hardy creatures because the woolly giant, and woolly rhinoceros, remarkable oxen and reindeer, absolute confidence following the flora northward in spring and southward in autumn.

50

Map: Possible Outline of Europe and Western Asia on the
Maximum

of the Fourth Ice Age (approximately 50,000 years in the past)

Such became the scene through which the Neanderthaler wandered, accumulating such subsistence as he ought to from small game or end result and berries and roots. Possibly he turned into specifically a vegetarian, chewing twigs and roots. His level difficult teeth advocate a in large part vegetarian dietary. But we additionally find the long marrow bones of fantastic animals in his caves, cracked to extract the marrow. His guns couldn't were of plenty avail in open battle with super beasts, but it is supposed that he attacked them with spears at tough river crossings and even constructed pitfalls for them. Possibly he followed the herds and preyed upon any dead that had been killed in fights, and possibly he performed the a part of jackal to the sabre-toothed tiger which nonetheless survived in his day. Possibly in the bitter hardships of the Glacial Ages this creature had taken to attacking animals after long a while of vegetarian edition.

We can not guess what this Neanderthal guy gave the impression of. He can also had been very hairy and really unhuman-searching indeed. It is even doubtful if he went erect. He might also have used his knuckles as well as his feet to keep himself up. Probably he went about fifty oneby myself or in small own family organizations. It is inferred from the shape of his jaw that he became incapable of speech as we recognize it.

For heaps of years those Neanderthalers had been the best animals that the European region had ever visible; after which a few thirty or thirty-five thousand years ago because the weather grew warmer a race of kindred beings, greater shrewd, understanding greater, speakme and co-working collectively, got here drifting into the Neanderthaler's global from the south. They ousted the Neanderthalers from their caves and squatting places; they hunted the same meals; they likely made warfare upon their grisly predecessors and killed them off. These newcomers from the south or the east—for at gift we do no longer recognize their vicinity of beginning—who at

closing drove the Neanderthalers out of existence altogether, were beings of our very own blood and kinfolk, the primary True Men. Their mind-instances and thumbs and necks and teeth were anatomically the same as our personal. In a cave at Cro-Magnon and in every other at Grimaldi, some of skeletons were found, the earliest clearly human remains which are thus far regarded.

So it's miles our race comes into the Record of the Rocks, and the tale of mankind starts offevolved.

COMPARISON OF (1) MODERN SKULL AND (2) RHODESIAN SKULL

COMPARISON OF (1) MODERN SKULL AND (2) RHODESIAN SKULL

Nat. Hist. Mus.

The global become growing liker our own in the ones days even though the climate become nonetheless austere. The glaciers of the Ice Age were receding in Europe; the reindeer of France and Spain presently gave way to notable herds of horses as grass multiplied upon the steppes, and the fifty twomammoth have become increasingly uncommon in southern Europe and ultimately receded northward altogether
....

We do no longer know in which the True Men first originated. But within the summer season of 1921, an exceedingly thrilling skull become determined collectively with portions of a skeleton at Broken Hill in South Africa, which seems to be a relic of a 3rd kind of guy, intermediate in its characteristics among the Neanderthaler and the individual. The mind-case shows a mind bigger in the front and smaller at the back of than the Neanderthaler's, and the skull become poised erect upon the spine in a pretty human manner. The teeth additionally and the bones are pretty human. But the face must

have been ape-like with big brow ridges and a ridge along the middle of the skull. The creature was indeed a real guy, so to speak, with an ape-like, Neanderthal face. This Rhodesian Man is certainly still towards actual men than the Neanderthal Man.

This Rhodesian cranium is probably simplest the second of what in the long run may also prove to be a protracted list of reveals of sub-human species which lived on earth in the full-size c program languageperiod of time among the beginnings of the Ice Age and the appearance of their common inheritor, and perhaps their commonplace exterminator, the True Man. The Rhodesian cranium itself might not be very historic. Up to the time of publishing this e book there was no precise determination of its probable age. It may be that this sub-human creature survived in South Africa till quite recent instances.

Fifty three

XI

THE FIRST TRUE MEN

THE earliest signs and lines at gift regarded to technological know-how, of a humanity which is undoubtedly kindred with ourselves, were determined in western Europe and specifically in France and Spain. Bones, guns, scratchings upon bone and rock, carved fragments of bone, and paintings in caves and upon rock surfaces dating. It is supposed. From 30,000 years in the past or more, were discovered in both these international locations. Spain is at present the richest united states of america in the world in these first relics of our real human ancestors.

Of route our gift collections of this stuff are the merest beginnings of the accumulations we may additionally desire for in the future, when there are searchers sufficient to make an intensive examination of all viable resources and while different countries within the international, now inaccessible to archæologists, have been explored in a few element. The more part of Africa and Asia has in no way even been traversed but via a educated observer interested by these subjects and loose to explore, and we must be very careful consequently not to conclude that the early proper men were distinctively population of western Europe or that they first regarded in that region.

In Asia or Africa or submerged beneath the ocean of to-day there may be richer and lots in advance deposits of actual human stays than whatever that has but come to light. I write in Asia or Africa, and I do now not point out America because so far there had been no finds at all of any of the higher Primates, either of first-rate apes, sub-guys, Neanderthalers nor early genuine guys. This development of life appears to had been an solely antique international improvement, and it was best apparently at the quit of the Old Stone Age that humans first made their manner throughout the land connexion this is now reduce with the aid of Behring Straits, into the American continent.

Fifty four

ONE OF THE MARVELLOUS CAVE PAINTINGS OF
ALTAMIRA, NORTH SPAIN

ONE OF THE MARVELLOUS CAVE PAINTINGS OF
ALTAMIRA, NORTH SPAIN

The Walls of the Caves are blanketed in those representations of Bulls, and so forth., painted in the gentle tones of pink

shaded to black. They may be fifteen or twenty thousand years vintage

These first actual people we know of in Europe appear already to have belonged to 1 or different of at the least two very distinct races. One of those races changed into of a completely excessive type indeed; it was tall and massive brained. One of the ladies's skulls observed exceeds in capability that of the common man of to-day. One of the men's skeletons is over six feet in peak. The physical type resembled that of the North American Indian. From the Cro-Magnon cave in which the primary skeletons had been determined these human beings have been known as Cro-Magnards. They have been savages, but savages of a excessive order. The 2d race, the race of the Grimaldi cave remains, become noticeably negroid in its characters. Its nearest living affinities are the Bushmen and Hottentots of South Africa. It is interesting to discover on the very outset of the recognised human tale, that mankind become already racially divided into as a minimum two predominant types; and one is tempted to such unwarrantable guesses as that the previous race was probable brownish as opposed to black and that it got here from the East or North, and that the latter become blackish instead of brown and got here from the equatorial south.

55

BONE CARVINGS OF THE PALÆOLITHIC PERIOD

BONE CARVINGS OF THE PALÆOLITHIC PERIOD

(1 and a couple of) Mammoth tusk carved to shape of Reindeer, (three) Dagger Handle representing Mammoth, and (4) Bone engraved with Horses' Heads

Brit. Mus.

56

And those savages of perhaps 40 thousand years in the past were so human that they pierced shells to make necklaces, painted themselves, carved pictures of bone and stone,

scratched figures on rocks and bones, and painted impolite however frequently very able sketches of beasts and the like upon the smooth walls of caves and upon inviting rock surfaces. They made a superb type of implements, lots smaller in scale and finer than the ones of the Neanderthal men. We have now in our museums super portions of their implements, their statuettes, their rock drawings and so on.

The earliest of them have been hunters. Their chief pursuit became the wild horse, the little bearded pony of that point. They followed it because it moved after pasture. And additionally they followed the bison. They knew the substantial, because they've left us strikingly powerful photographs of that creature. To choose by one instead ambiguous drawing they trapped and killed it.

They hunted with spears and throwing stones. They do no longer appear to have had the bow, and it's miles doubtful in the event that they had yet learnt to tame any animals. They had no puppies. There is one carving of a horse's head and one or drawings that propose a bridled horse, with a twisted skin or tendon round it. But the little horses of that age and region could not have carried a person, and if the horse turned into domesticated it turned into used as a led horse. It is dubious and implausible that they had but learnt the rather unnatural use of animal's milk as meals.

They do not seem to have erected any homes although they'll have had tents of skins, and though they made clay figures they by no means rose to the making of pottery. Since they had no cooking implements their cookery have to had been rudimentary or nonexistent. They knew nothing of cultivation and nothing of any sort of basket work or woven fabric. Except for his or her robes of pores and skin or fur they had been naked painted savages.

These earliest recognised men hunted the open steppes of Europe for a hundred centuries perhaps, and then slowly drifted and changed earlier than a change of climate. Europe, century by century, become developing milder and damper. Reindeer receded northward and eastward, and bison and horse observed. The steppes gave way to forests, and crimson deer took the place of horse and bison. There is a 57change in the character of the implements with this alteration in their application. River and lake fishing turns into of wonderful importance to guys, and excellent implements of bone multiplied. “The bone needles of this age,” says de Mortillet, “are a great deal advanced to those of later, even historic instances, right down to the Renaissance. The Romans, as an example, by no means had needles akin to the ones of this epoch.”

THE RUTOT BUST OF A CRO-MAGNON MAN

THE RUTOT BUST OF A CRO-MAGNON MAN

Almost fifteen or twelve thousand years in the past a fresh people drifted into the south of Spain, and left very first rate drawings of themselves upon exposed rock faces there. These have been the Azilians (named from the Mas d’Azil cave). They had the bow; they seem to have worn feather headdresses; they drew vividly; but also that they had decreased their drawings to a form of symbolism—a man as an example might be represented through a vertical dab with or three horizontal dabs—that endorse the dawn of the writing concept. Against hunting sketches there are frequently marks like tallies. One drawing suggests men smoking out a bees’ nest.

Among the maximum current discoveries of Palæolithic Art are these specimens observed in 1920 in Spain. They are probable ten or twelve thousand years vintage

fifty nine These are the latest of the men that we call Palæolithic (Old Stone Age) due to the fact they had only chipped implements. By ten or twelve thousand years a new form of lifestyles has dawned in Europe, guys have learnt not simplest to chip but to shine and grind stone implements, and that they have begun cultivation. The Neolithic Age (New Stone Age) become beginning.

It is exciting to observe that less than a century in the past there nevertheless survived in a far off a part of the arena, in Tasmania, a race of humans at a decrease level of bodily and intellectual improvement than any of these earliest races of mankind who have left traces in Europe. These human beings had lengthy ago been reduce off via geographical adjustments from the rest of the species, and from stimulation and development. They seem to have degenerated in place of evolved. They lived a base lifestyles subsisting upon shellfish and small game. They had no habitations but best squatting places. They have been real guys of our species, but they had neither the manual dexterity nor the creative powers of the first proper men.

60

XII

PRIMITIVE THOUGHT

AND now allow us to bask in a totally thrilling speculation; how did it sense to be a man in those early days of the human adventure? How did men assume and what did they assume in the ones far flung days of looking and wandering four hundred

centuries ago before seed time and harvest commenced. Those had been days lengthy earlier than the written document of any human impressions, and we are left almost entirely to inference and guesswork in our solutions to those questions.

The resources to which clinical guys have long gone in their attempts to reconstruct that primitive mentality are very diverse. Recently the science of psycho-evaluation, which analyzes the manner wherein the egotistic and passionate impulses of the child are limited, suppressed, changed or overlaid, to evolve them to the desires of social existence, appears to have thrown a considerable amount of light upon the history of primitive society; and any other fruitful source of inspiration has been the take a look at of the thoughts and customs of such present day savages as still survive. Again there is a sort of intellectual fossilization which we discover in people-lore and the deep-mendacity irrational superstitions and prejudices that also live to tell the tale amongst modern civilized human beings. And finally we've in the an increasing number of numerous photos, statues, carvings, symbols and so forth, as we draw close to to our very own time, clearer and clearer indicators of what man found exciting and worthy of document and illustration.

Primitive man possibly thought very much as a child thinks, that is to mention in a sequence of creative pics. He conjured up images or images presented themselves to his thoughts, and he acted in accordance with the feelings they aroused. So a toddler or an uneducated person does to-day. Systematic wondering is outwardly a comparatively past due improvement in human revel in; it has not performed any exquisite component in human existence until in the ultimate 3 thousand years. And even to-day folks that in reality manage and order their thoughts are but a small minority of mankind. Most of the world nonetheless lives through creativeness and ardour.

Probably the earliest human societies, in the commencing tiers of the authentic human tale, were small circle of relatives corporations. Just because the flocks and herds of the sooner mammals arose out of households which remained collectively and increased, so probably did the earliest tribes. But earlier than this will take place a positive restraint upon the primitive egotisms of the person needed to be mounted. The worry of the daddy and respect for the mother had to be prolonged into grownup lifestyles, and the herbal jealousy of the old guy of the group for the more youthful adult males as they grew up needed to be mitigated. The mom on the other hand changed into the herbal adviser and protector of the young. Human social life grew up out of the response among the crude instinct of the younger to head off and pair via themselves as they grew up, on the one hand, and the dangers and downsides of separation on the other. An anthropological writer of outstanding genius, J. J. Atkinson, in his Primal Law, has proven how a good deal of the commonplace law of savages, the Tabus, which can be so fantastic a reality in tribal lifestyles, can be ascribed to such a mental adjustment of the needs of the primitive human animal to a developing social existence, and the later paintings of the psycho- analysts has done a lot to affirm his interpretation of these possibilities.

Some speculative writers might have us accept as true with that recognize and worry of the Old Man and the emotional reaction of the primitive savage to older defensive women, exaggerated in desires and enriched by means of fanciful intellectual play, performed a massive component in the beginnings of primitive faith and inside the idea of gods and goddesses. Associated with this respect for effective or helpful personalities was a dread and exaltation of such personages after their deaths, because of their reappearance in dreams. It turned into clean to agree with they were now not simply dead however only highly transferred to a remoteness of extra power.

The desires, imaginations and fears of a toddler are a long way more shiny and real than those of a cutting-edge grownup, and primitive man was always some thing of a toddler. He became closer to the animals ⁶²also, and he could think them to have motives and reactions like his own. He could consider animal helpers, animal enemies, animal gods. One needs to had been an ingenious baby oneself to realize once more how important, considerable, portentous or friendly, surprisingly shaped rocks, lumps of timber, wonderful bushes or the like may additionally have regarded to the guys of the Old Stone Age, and the way dream and fancy could create testimonies and legends about such things that would turn out to be credible as they informed them. Some of those memories could be good sufficient to keep in mind and tell once more. The girls could inform them to the children and so establish a subculture. To nowadays most ingenious kids invent lengthy testimonies in which some favorite doll or animal or some first-rate semi-person figures as the hero, and primitive man probable did the identical— with a miles stronger disposition to accept as true with his hero real.

RELICS OF THE STONE AGE

RELICS OF THE STONE AGE

Chert implements from Somaliland. In standard form they are much like those located in Western and Northern Europe

Brit. Mus.

For the very earliest of the proper guys that we recognize of have been probable pretty talkative beings. In that manner they have differed from the Neanderthals and had a bonus over them. The Neanderthalers can also were a dumb animal. Of path the primitive sixty threehuman speech became in all likelihood a very scanty collection of names, and may had been eked out with gestures and symptoms.

There is no sort of savage so low as not to have a form of technological know-how of cause and impact. But primitive man become not very essential in his associations of motive with impact; he very without problems related an impact with some thing quite wrong as its motive. "You accomplish that and so," he said, "and so and so happens." You give a baby a poisonous berry and it dies. You consume the coronary heart of a valiant enemy and also you come to be robust. There we've got two bits of motive and effect association, one genuine one false. We call the machine of reason and effect inside the thoughts of a savage, Fetish; but Fetish is sincerely savage technological know-how. It differs from modern-day technology in that it is completely unsystematic and uncritical and so extra often incorrect.

WIDESPREAD SIMILARITY OF MEN OF THE STONE AGE

WIDESPREAD SIMILARITY OF MEN OF THE STONE AGE

On the left is a flint put into effect excavated in Gray's Inn Lane, London; at the proper certainly one of similar shape chipped through primitive guys of Somaliland

Brit. Mus.

In many instances it is not difficult to hyperlink purpose and effect, in sixty fourmany others faulty ideas have been soon corrected through experience; but there has been a massive series of issues of very notable significance to primitive guy, in which he sought constantly for reasons and found explanations that were incorrect but no longer sufficiently wrong nor so obviously incorrect as to be detected. It became a count number of amazing importance to him that recreation must be plentiful or fish plentiful and effortlessly stuck, and no question he tried and believed in 1000 charms, incantations and omens to determine these acceptable outcomes. Another brilliant subject of his become infection and demise. Occasionally infections crept thru the land and guys died of

them. Occasionally guys had been laid low with infection and died or had been enfeebled with none show up motive. This too ought to have given the hasty, emotional thoughts of primitive guy a good deal feverish exercise. Dreams and awesome guesses made him blame this, or appeal for help to that guy or beast or component. He had the child's flair for fear and panic.

Quite early inside the little human tribe, older, steadier minds sharing the fears, sharing the imaginations, but a little more forceful than the others, have to have asserted themselves, to advise, to prescribe, to command. This they declared unpropitious and that imperative, this an omen of exact and that an omen of evil. The professional in Fetish, the Medicine Man, was the primary priest. He exhorted, he interpreted desires, he warned, he finished the complex hocus pocus that brought good fortune or avoided calamity. Primitive religion was no longer a lot what we now call faith as exercise and observance, and the early priest dictated what become indeed an arbitrary primitive practical technology.

Sixty five

XIII

THE BEGINNINGS OF CULTIVATION

WE are still very ignorant approximately the beginnings of cultivation and settlement in the world despite the fact that a widespread amount of research and hypothesis has been given to these subjects inside the final fifty years. All that we will say with any self assurance at present is that somewhen approximately 15,000 and 12,000 B.C. Even as the Azilian human beings have been within the south of Spain and at the same time as the remnants of the earlier hunters have been drifting northward and eastward, somewhere in North Africa

or Western Asia or in that outstanding Mediterranean valley this is now submerged beneath the waters of the Mediterranean sea, there have been folks who, age by age, have been working out vitally vital matters; they have been starting cultivation and that they were domesticating animals. They had been also starting to make, further to the chipped implements in their hunter forebears, implements of polished stone. They had discovered the opportunity of basketwork and more or less woven textiles of plant fibre, and that they were beginning to make a rudely modelled pottery.

They had been getting into upon a new phase in human culture, the Neolithic segment (New Stone Age) as prominent from the Palæolithic (Old Stone) phase of the Cro-Magnards, the Grimaldi humans, the Azilians and their like. [1] Slowly these Neolithic humans spread over the warmer components of the arena; and the arts they'd mastered, the plants and animals that they had learnt to use, unfold by way of imitation and acquisition even greater broadly than they did. By 10,000 B.C., maximum of mankind was at the Neolithic stage.

Sixty six Now the ploughing of land, the sowing of seed, the reaping of harvest, threshing and grinding, may additionally appear the most manifestly reasonable steps to a current mind simply as to a modern thoughts it's miles a common that the arena is spherical. What else should you do? Human beings will ask. What else can or not it's? But to the primitive guy of twenty thousand years in the past neither of the structures of action and reasoning that seem so positive and take place to us to-day had been at all apparent. He felt his manner to powerful exercise through a multitude of trials and misconceptions, with first-rate and useless gildings and false interpretations at every flip. Somewhere within the Mediterranean place, wheat grew wild; and man might also have learnt to pound after which grind up its seeds for meals lengthy before he learnt to sow. He reaped before he sowed.

And it's miles a totally incredible aspect that at some point of the arena anywhere there may be sowing and harvesting there may be nevertheless traceable the vestiges of a robust primitive affiliation of the concept of sowing with the idea of a blood sacrifice, and often of the sacrifice of a person. The examine of the original entanglement of these things is a profoundly appealing one to the curious mind; the interested reader will discover it very absolutely developed in that huge paintings, Sir J. G. Frazer's Golden Bough. It became an entanglement, we should take into account, in the infantile, dreaming, delusion-making primitive thoughts; no reasoned manner will provide an explanation for it. But in that global of 12,000 to twenty,000 years in the past, it would appear that on every occasion seed time came round to the Neolithic peoples there was a human sacrifice. And it became not the sacrifice of any mean or outcast man or woman; it became the sacrifice normally of a chosen adolescents or maiden, a adolescents extra regularly who became handled with profound deference and even worship up to the moment of his immolation. He was a type of sacrificial god-king, and all the info of his killing had turn out to be a ritual directed by the vintage, understanding guys and sanctioned by way of the accumulated utilization of a while.

Sixty seven

NEOLITHIC FLINT IMPLEMENTS

NEOLITHIC FLINT IMPLEMENTS

Brit. Mus.

At first primitive guys, with simplest a totally hard idea of the seasons, must have observed fantastic difficulty in determining whilst become the propitious second for the seed-time sacrifice and the sowing. There is a few reason for supposing that there has been an early stage in human experience while men had no concept of a 12 months. The first 68chronology

turned into in lunar months; it is supposed that the years of the Biblical patriarchs are surely moons, and the Babylonian calendar suggests distinct lines of an try and reckon seed time by way of taking thirteen lunar months to see it spherical. This lunar have an impact on upon the calendar reaches all the way down to our very own days. If usage did not stupid our feel of its strangeness we ought to suppose it a totally fantastic issue indeed that the Christian Church does no longer commemorate the Crucifixion and Resurrection of Christ at the right anniversaries however on dates that vary year by using yr with the levels of the moon.

It may be doubted whether the first agriculturalists made any commentary of the celebs. It is much more likely that stars had been first found through migratory herdsmen, who observed them a handy mark of path. But once their use in determining seasons turned into realized, their significance to agriculture became very fantastic. The seed-time sacrifice became related up with the southing or northing of a few distinguished megastar. A fable and worship of that megastar become for primitive guy an nearly inevitable consequence.

NEOLITHICISM OF TO-DAY

NEOLITHICISM OF TO-DAY

Spearheads, exactly as within the genuine Neolithic days, but made recently by Australian Natives,

- (1) Made from a telegraph insulator;
- (2) from a bit of broken bottle glass.

Brit. Mus.

It is easy to see how vital the man of expertise and experience, the man who knew approximately the blood sacrifice and the celebrities, have become in this early Neolithic international.

The fear of uncleanness and pollutants, and the techniques of cleansing that have been beneficial, constituted some other supply of electricity for the informed ladies and men. For there have constantly been witches as well as wizards, and priestesses as well as monks. The early priest changed into without a doubt now not a lot a 69non secular guy as a man of carried out technology. His technology changed into commonly empirical and frequently bad; he saved it secret from the generality of men very jealously; however that does not alter the truth that his primary function turned into knowledge and that his number one use became a practical use.

SPECIMEN OF NEOLITHIC POTTERY

SPECIMEN OF NEOLITHIC POTTERY

Dug up at Mortlake from the Thames Bed

Brit. Mus.

Twelve or fifteen thousand years ago, in all of the heat and fairly well-watered parts of the Old World these Neolithic human groups, with their class and way of life of priests and priestesses and their cultivated fields and their improvement of villages and little walled towns, were spreading. Age by age a waft and alternate of ideas went on between those communities. Eliot Smith and Rivers have used the time period "Heliolithic subculture" for the culture of those first agricultural peoples. "Heliolithic" (Sun and Stone) is not possibly the nice viable phrase to apply for this, but until medical guys deliver us a higher one we shall ought to use it. Originating someplace in the Mediterranean and western Asiatic area, it spread age by age eastward and from island to island across the Pacific until it may even have reached America and mingled with the more primitive approaches of residing of the Mongoloid immigrants coming down from the North.

Wherever the brownish humans with the Heliolithic lifestyle went they took with them all or maximum of a positive group of curious thoughts and practices. Some of them are such queer ideas that they name for the explanation of the mental expert. They made pyramids and awesome mounds, and installation great circles of large stones, possibly to facilitate the astronomical remark of the monks; they made mummies of a few or all in their dead; they tattooed and circumcized; they'd the old custom, referred to as the couvade, of sending the daddy to bed and relaxation while a child changed into born, and they had as a luck image the well-known Swastika.

If we have been to make a map of the arena with dots to expose how far those organization practices have left their lines, we should make a belt along the temperate and sub-tropical coasts of the world from Stonehenge and Spain internationally to Mexico and Peru. But Africa beneath the equator, north imperative Europe, and north Asia might show none of these dottings; there lived races who have been developing along nearly impartial lines.

[1] The term Palæolithic we may also word is likewise used to cowl the Neanderthaler and even the Eolithic implements. The pre-human age is referred to as the "Older Palæolithic;" the age of authentic guys the usage of unpolished stones inside the "Newer Palæolithic."

ABOUT 10,000 B.C. The geography of the arena changed into very similar in its trendy define to that of the sector to-day. It is probable that by using that point the extremely good barrier throughout the Straits of Gibraltar that had hitherto banked lower back the ocean waters from the Mediterranean valley had been eaten through, and that the Mediterranean became a sea following a great deal the equal coastlines because it does now. The Caspian Sea became possibly still a ways greater tremendous than it's far at present, and it can had been non-stop with the Black Sea to the north of the Caucasus Mountains. About this terrific Central Asian sea lands which are now steppes and deserts were fertile and habitable. Generally it changed into a moister and greater fertile world. European Russia became a great deal extra a land of swamp and lake than it's miles now, and there can also still had been a land connexion between Asia and America at Behring Straits.

It could have been already possible at that time to have outstanding the main racial divisions of mankind as we realize them to-day. Across the nice and cozy temperate regions of this instead warmer and higher-wooded global, and along the coasts, stretched the brownish peoples of the Heliolithic subculture, the ancestors of the bulk of the dwelling inhabitants of the Mediterranean international, of the Berbers, the Egyptians and of lots of the populace of South and Eastern Asia. This excellent race had of path a number of varieties. The Iberian or Mediterranean or "darkish-white" race of the Atlantic and Mediterranean coast, the "Hamitic" peoples which encompass the Berbers and Egyptians, the Dravidians; the darker humans of India, a large number of East Indian human beings, many Polynesian races and the Maoris are all divisions of numerous price of this excellent main mass of humanity. Its western varieties are whiter than its eastern.

In the forests of important and northerly Europe a extra blonde range seventy twoof fellows with blue eyes was turning into distinguishable, branching off from the primary mass of

brownish humans, a selection which many people now communicate of because the Nordic race. In the more open regions of northeastern Asia turned into some other differentiation of this brownish humanity in the direction of a type with extra oblique eyes, high cheek-bones, a yellowish pores and skin, and really directly black hair, the Mongolian peoples. In South Africa, Australia, in lots of tropical islands in the south of Asia have been remains of the early negroid peoples. The central parts of Africa were already a location of racial intermixture. Nearly all of the colored races of Africa today seem to be blends of the brownish peoples of the north with a negroid substratum.

A Diagrammatic Summary of Current Ideas of the Relationship of

Human Races

We ought to take into account that human races can all interbreed freely and that they separate, mingle and reunite as clouds do. Human races do now not branch out like timber with branches that by no means come collectively once more. It is a aspect we want to endure continuously in thoughts, this remingling of races at any opportunity. It will save us from many merciless delusions and prejudices if we do so. People will use the sort of word as race inside the loosest way, and base the maximum preposterous generalizations upon it. They will communicate of a “British” seventy threerace or of a “European” race. But almost all the European nations are pressured combinations of brownish, dark-white, white and Mongolian factors.

A MAYA STELE

A MAYA STELE

Showing a worshipper and a Serpent God. Note the grotesque faces inside the writing

Brit. Mus.

It turned into on the Neolithic section of human development that peoples of the Mongolian breed first made their manner into America. Apparently they got here by means of manner of Behring Straits and spread southward. They discovered caribou, the American reindeer, inside the north and remarkable seventy fourherds of bison within the south. When they reached South America there had been still living the Glyptodon, a significant armadillo, and the Megatherium, a massive clumsy sloth as excessive as an elephant. They in all likelihood exterminated the latter beast, which turned into as helpless because it was massive.

The more portion of those American tribes in no way rose above a hunting nomadic Neolithic existence. They in no way located the use of iron, and their leader metal possessions had been native gold and copper. But in Mexico, Yucatan and Peru situations existed favourable to settled cultivation, and right here approximately 1000 B.C. Or so arose very exciting civilizations of a parallel but distinctive type from the vintage-international civilization. Like the lots in advance primitive civilizations of the old global those groups displayed a extremely good development of human sacrifice approximately the techniques of seed time and harvest; however while in the antique global, as we will see, those primary ideas have been ultimately mitigated, complex and overlaid with the aid of others, in America they developed and have been elaborated, to a very excessive diploma of depth. These American civilized nations were basically priest-ruled countries; their war chiefs and rulers had been beneath a rigorous rule of regulation and omen.

These clergymen carried astronomical technology to a excessive stage of accuracy. They knew their yr better than the Babylonians of whom we shall currently inform. In Yucatan they had a kind of writing, the Maya writing, of the maximum curious and elaborate individual. So some distance as we had been capable of decipher it, it was used particularly for

keeping the exact and complex calendars upon which the priests expended their intelligence. The artwork of the Maya civilization got here to a climax about 700 or 800 A.D. The sculptured paintings of these people amazes the current observer by its outstanding plastic strength and its common beauty, and perplexes him by a grotesqueness and by means of a sort of insane conventionality and intricacy out of doors the circle of his ideas. There is nothing quite find it irresistible within the vintage global. The nearest method, and that may be a far off one, is found in archaic Indian carvings. Everywhere there are woven feathers and serpents cord inside and out. Many Maya inscriptions resemble a positive sort of complex drawing made by means of lunatics in European asylums, greater than another vintage-world work. It is as if the Maya mind seventy fivehad evolved upon a exclusive line from the vintage-world mind, had a special twist to its ideas, was no longer, via antique-international standards, a rational mind at all.

This linking of those aberrant American civilizations to the concept of a preferred mental aberration reveals guide of their superb obsession through the losing of human blood. The Mexican civilization specially ran blood; it supplied thousands of human sufferers every year. The cutting open of dwelling victims, the tearing out of the nevertheless beating coronary heart, become an act that dominated the minds and lives of these peculiar priesthoods. The public existence, the country wide festivities all turned in this exceedingly horrible act.

NEOLITHIC WARRIOR

NEOLITHIC WARRIOR

Modelled from drawing via Prof. Rutot

The everyday lifestyles of the common people in those communities become very just like the everyday existence of every other barbaric peasantry. Their pottery, weaving and

dyeing changed into superb. The Maya writing became now not simplest carven on stone however written and painted upon skins and the like. The European and American museums incorporate many enigmatical Maya manuscripts of which at gift little has been deciphered except the dates. In Peru there had been beginnings of a similar writing however they were outdated by way of a way of retaining statistics via knotting 76 cords. A similar method of mnemonics was in use in China lots of years ago.

In the old global before 4000 or 5000 B.C., that is to mention 3 or four thousand years in advance, there were primitive civilizations not not like these American civilizations; civilizations primarily based upon a temple, having a enormous amount of blood sacrifices and with an intensely astronomical priesthood. But inside the old global the primitive civilizations reacted upon each other and evolved toward the situations of our own world. In America these primitive civilizations never improved beyond this primitive level. Each of them became in a bit global of its personal. Mexico it appears knew little or nothing of Peru, until the Europeans came to America. The potato, which become the principal food stuff in Peru, became unknown in Mexico.

Age via age those peoples lived and marvelled at their gods and made their sacrifices and died. Maya art rose to excessive levels of ornamental splendor. Men made love and tribes made war. Drought and lots, pestilence and health, observed one another. The monks elaborated their calendar and their sacrificial ritual thru long centuries, however made little progress in other guidelines.

SUMERIA, EARLY EGYPT AND WRITING

THE vintage world is a much broader, more various stage than the new. By 6000 or 7000 B.C. There were already quasi-civilized groups nearly at the Peruvian degree, appearing in diverse fertile areas of Asia and in the Nile valley. At that point north Persia and western Turkestan and south Arabia were all greater fertile than they're now, and there are strains of very early groups in those areas. It is in lower Mesopotamia but and in Egypt that there first seem towns, temples, systematic irrigation, and evidences of a social organisation growing above the level of an insignificant barbaric village-town. In those days the Euphrates and Tigris flowed with the aid of separate mouths into the Persian Gulf, and it turned into within the us of a between them that the Sumerians built their first cities. About the same time, for chronology continues to be indistinct, the extremely good records of Egypt turned into beginning.

These Sumerians appear to have been a brownish humans with outstanding noses. They employed a sort of writing that has been deciphered, and their language is referred to now. They had found the usage of bronze and they constructed awesome tower-like temples of sun-dried brick. The clay of this u . S . May be very great; they used it to jot down upon, and so it's far that their inscriptions have been preserved to us. They had livestock, sheep, goats and asses, however no horses. They fought strolling, in near formation, wearing spears and shields of skin. Their garb become of wool and they shaved their heads.

Each of the Sumerian cities seems commonly to were an impartial nation with a god of its personal and monks of its own. But on occasion one town would establish an ascendancy over others and exact tribute from their populace. A very ancient inscription 78at Nippur information the "empire," the

primary recorded empire, of the Sumerian metropolis of Erech. Its god and its priest-king claimed an expert from the Persian Gulf to the Red Sea.

BRICK OF HAMMURABI, KING OF BABYLON ABOUT 2200

<small>B.C.</small>

BRICK OF HAMMURABI, KING OF BABYLON ABOUT 2200 B.C.

Note the cuneiform characters of the inscription, which information the constructing of a temple to a Sun God

At first writing changed into merely an abbreviated technique of pictorial record. Even before Neolithic instances men have been beginning to write. The Azilian rock images to which we've already referred show the start of the technique. Many of them document hunts and expeditions, and in maximum of those the human figures are plainly drawn. But in some the painter would now not bother with head and limbs; he simply indicated men by means of a vertical and one or two transverse strokes. From this to a traditional condensed picture writing was an clean transition. In Sumeria, in which the writing turned into finished on clay with a stick, the dabs of the characters soon have become unrecognizably in contrast to the things they stood for, but in Egypt in which men painted on walls and on strips of the papyrus reed (the primary paper) the likeness to the aspect imitated remained. From the reality that the wooden patterns used in Sumeria made wedge-formed marks, the Sumerian writing is known as cuneiform (= wedge-shaped).

79

EBONY CYLINDER SEALS OF FIRST EGYPTIAN DYNASTY

EBONY CYLINDER SEALS OF FIRST EGYPTIAN DYNASTY

Recovered from the Tombs at Abydos in 1921 by way of the British School of Archæology. They deliver evidence of early form of block printing

An important step closer to writing became made whilst pics were used to suggest now not the issue represented however some comparable thing. In the rebus dear to children of a suitable age, this is nevertheless completed to-day. We draw a camp with tents and a bell, and the child is extremely joyful to wager that that is the Scotch call Campbell. The Sumerian language turned into a language made from accumulated syllables rather like a few contemporary Amerindian languages, and it lent itself very quite simply to this syllabic method of writing phrases expressing thoughts that couldn't be conveyed by means of pictures immediately. Egyptian writing underwent parallel traits. Later on, when foreign peoples with much less noticeably syllabled strategies of speech had been to analyze and use those picture scripts they have been to make the ones further changes and simplifications that evolved at final into alphabetical writing. All the genuine alphabets of the later global derived from a aggregate of the Sumerian cuneiform and the Egyptian hieroglyphic (priest writing). Later in China there was to broaden a conventionalized photograph writing, but in China it in no way got to the alphabetical level.

80The invention of writing became of very amazing importance in the development of human societies. It put agreements, legal guidelines, commandments on record. It made the increase of states large than the vintage city states feasible. It made a non-stop ancient attention viable. The command of the priest or king and his seal could cross far past his sight and voice and could survive his death. It is thrilling to observe that during historical Sumeria seals were significantly used. A king or a nobleman or a service provider might have his seal regularly very artistically carved, and could provoke it

on any clay file he needed to authorize. So close had civilization were given to printing six thousand years in the past. Then the clay turned into dried difficult and have become everlasting. For the reader ought to remember that inside the land of Mesopotamia for infinite years, letters, statistics and accounts have been all written on relatively indestructible tiles. To that fact we owe a wonderful wealth of recovered know-how.

THE SAKHARA PYRAMIDS

THE SAKHARA PYRAMIDS

The Pyramid to the right, the step Pyramid, is the oldest stone building within the world

Photo: F. Boyer

Bronze, copper, gold, silver and, as a treasured rarity, meteoric iron had been known in each Sumeria and Egypt at a completely early level.

Eighty one

VIEW FROM THE SUMMIT OF THE GREAT PYRAMID OF CHEOPS

VIEW FROM THE SUMMIT OF THE GREAT PYRAMID OF CHEOPS

Showing how these first rate monuments dominate the apparent

Photo: D. McLeish

eighty two

THE TEMPLE OF HATHOR AT DENDEREH

THE TEMPLE OF HATHOR AT DENDEREH

Photo: D. McLeish

Daily existence in those first city lands of the antique global need to have been 83very comparable in each Egypt and Sumeria. And except for the asses and farm animals within the streets it need to have been now not unlike the existence inside the Maya cities of America three or four thousand years later. Most of the human beings in peace time were busy with irrigation and cultivation—except on days of religious festivity. They had no money and no want for it. They controlled their small occasional trades via barter. The princes and rulers who on my own had various possessions used gold and silver bars and treasured stones for any incidental act of change. The temple ruled lifestyles; in Sumeria it turned into a superb towering temple that went as much as a roof from which the celebs were located; in Egypt it changed into a large constructing with handiest a floor ground. In Sumeria the priest ruler become the finest, maximum wonderful of beings. In Egypt however there was one that became raised above the priests; he changed into the residing incarnation of the leader god of the land, the Pharaoh, the god king.

There have been few changes inside the global in those days; guys's days had been sunny, toilsome and traditional. Few strangers got here into the land and which include did fared uncomfortably. The priest directed life according to immemorial guidelines and watched the celebrities for seed time and marked the omens of the sacrifices and interpreted the warnings of desires. Men labored and cherished and died, now not unhappily, forgetful of the savage beyond in their race and heedless of its destiny. Sometimes the ruler became benign. Such become Pepi II, who reigned in Egypt for ninety years. Sometimes he changed into formidable and took men's sons to be infantrymen and sent them against neighbouring city states to struggle and plunder, or he made them toil to construct exceptional homes. Such had been Cheops and Chephren and Mycerinus, who constructed the ones massive sepulchral piles, the pyramids at Gizeh. The largest of these is 450 ft excessive and the burden of stone in it's miles 4,883,000

heaps. All this was added down the Nile in boats and lugged into location chiefly by way of human muscle. Its erection should have exhausted Egypt more than a high-quality battle could have completed.

Eighty four

XVI

PRIMITIVE NOMADIC PEOPLES

IT became no longer best in Mesopotamia and the Nile Valley that guys were settling down to agriculture and the formation of city states inside the centuries between 6000 and 8000 B.C. Wherever there were possibilities of irrigation and a consistent all-the-year-spherical food deliver men have been replacing the uncertainties and hardships of hunting and wandering for the exercises of agreement. On the higher Tigris a people known as the Assyrians have been founding cities; in the valleys of Asia Minor and at the Mediterranean shorelines and islands, there have been small groups growing as much as civilization. Possibly parallel tendencies of human lifestyles have been already occurring in beneficial areas of India, and China. In many elements of Europe in which there have been lakes well stocked with fish, little groups of fellows had long settled in dwellings constructed on piles over the water, and had been eking out agriculture by way of fishing and looking. But over much larger areas of the old world no such settlement changed into viable. The land turned into too harsh, too thickly wooded or too arid, or the seasons too unsure for mankind, with only the implements and technological know-how of that age to take root.

For settlement beneath the conditions of the primitive civilizations guys wanted a constant water deliver and heat and sunshine. Where these wishes were now not satisfied, guy may

want to stay as a brief, as a hunter following his game, as a herdsman following the seasonal grass, but he couldn't settle. The transition from the hunting to the herding existence may additionally had been very sluggish. From following herds of wild livestock or (in Asia) wild horses, guys may have come to an idea of property in them, have learnt to pen them into valleys, have fought for them against wolves, wild puppies and other predatory beasts.

85

POTTERY AND IMPLEMENTS OF THE LAKE DWELLERS

POTTERY AND IMPLEMENTS OF THE LAKE DWELLERS

Brit. Mus.

86

A CONTEMPORARY LAKE VILLAGE

A CONTEMPORARY LAKE VILLAGE

These Borneo dwellings are almost opposite numbers of the homes of European neolithic communities 6000 B.C.

So even as the primitive civilizations of the cultivators had been developing up mainly inside the fantastic river valleys, a different manner of residing, the nomadic life, a existence in constant movement from side to side from iciness pasture to summer season pasture, turned into also developing up. The nomadic peoples had been at the entire hardier than the agriculturalists; they have been much less prolific and numerous, they'd no everlasting temples and no noticeably organized priesthood; that they had less tools; but the reader have to not suppose that theirs become necessarily a much less distinctly advanced manner of living on that account. In many ways this unfastened lifestyles became a fuller existence than that of the tillers of the soil. The character became more self-

reliant; much less of a unit in a crowd. The leader become extra essential; the medication man perhaps much less so.

NOMADS IN EGYPT

87

NOMADS IN EGYPT

NOMADS IN EGYPT

Egyptian wall portray in a tomb near historic Beni Hassan, center Egypt. It depicts the arrival of a tribe of Semitic Nomads in Egypt about the year of 1895 B.C.

Moving over massive stretches of usa the nomad took a wider view of life. He touched at the confines of this settled land and that. He was used to the sight of peculiar faces. He needed to scheme and deal with for pasture with competing tribes. He knew greater of minerals than the folk upon the plough lands because he went over mountain passes and into rocky locations. He may also were a better metallurgist. Possibly bronze and lots more probable iron smelting had been nomadic discoveries. Some of the earliest implements of iron reduced from its ores had been determined in Central Europe some distance far from the early civilizations.

FLINT KNIVES OF 4500 <small>B.C.</small>

FLINT KNIVES OF 4500 B.C.

Excavated 1922 by means of the British School of Archæology in Egypt from First Dynasty Tombs

On the opposite hand the settled folk had their textiles and their pottery and made many perfect things. It became inevitable that as the 2 varieties of life, the agricultural and the nomadic differentiated, a sure quantity of looting and buying and selling must expand among the 2. In Sumeria specifically which had deserts and seasonal 88country on both hand it have to had been traditional to have the nomads tenting near the

cultivated fields, trading and stealing and possibly tinkering, as gypsies do to this present day. (But hens they would not scouse borrow, due to the fact the domestic fowl—an Indian jungle fowl at the beginning become not domesticated by means of guy till approximately one thousand B.C.) They could convey precious stones and matters of steel and leather-based. If they had been hunters they might convey skins. They might get in trade pottery and beads and glass, clothes and suchlike manufactured things.

EGYPT PEASANTS GOING TO WORK

EGYPT PEASANTS GOING TO WORK

From an ancient and curiously painted model inside the British Museum

Three essential regions and 3 important sorts of wandering and imperfectly settled human beings there had been in those faraway days of the first civilizations in Sumeria and early Egypt. Away in the forests of Europe have been the blonde Nordic peoples, hunters and herdsmen, a lowly race. The primitive civilizations saw little or no of this race earlier than 1500 B.C. Away at the steppes of Jap Asia diverse Mongolian tribes, the Hunnish peoples, were domesticating the pony and developing a completely huge sweeping addiction of seasonal motion among their summer time and iciness tenting locations. Possibly the Nordic and Hunnish peoples had been nonetheless separated from one another with the aid of the swamps of Russia and the extra Caspian Sea of that point. For very a great deal of Russia there has been swamp and lake. In the deserts, which have been developing extra arid now, of Syria and Arabia, tribes of a darkish white or brownish humans, the Semitic tribes, had been using flocks of sheep and goats and asses from pasture to pasture. It was these Semitic shepherds and positive greater negroid human beings from southern Persia, the Elamites, who were the primary nomads to come into close touch with the early civilizations. They got here 90as investors and as raiders. Finally there arose leaders

amongst them with bolder imaginations, and they became conquerors.

89

STELE GLORIFYING KING NARAM SIN, OF AKKAD

STELE GLORIFYING KING NARAM SIN, OF AKKAD

This monarch, son of Sargon I, became a superb architect as well as a well-known conqueror. Discovered in 1898 among the ruins of Susa, Persia

About 2750 B.C. A first-rate Semitic leader, Sargon, had conquered the complete Sumerian land and turned into grasp of all the world from the Persian Gulf to the Mediterranean Sea. He became an illiterate barbarian and his human beings, the Akkadians, learnt the Sumerian writing and adopted the Sumerian language as the speech of the officials and the found out. The empire he founded decayed after centuries, and after one inundation of Elamites a clean Semitic humans, the Amorites, by way of tiers established their rule over Sumeria. They made their capital in what had hitherto been a small up-river metropolis, Babylon, and their empire is called the first Babylonian Empire. It became consolidated by an excellent king referred to as Hammurabi (circa 2100 B.C.) who made the earliest code of laws yet known to records.

The slender valley of the Nile lies much less open to nomadic invasion than Mesopotamia, but approximately the time of Hammurabi came about a successful Semitic invasion of Egypt and a line of Pharaohs was set up, the Hyksos or "shepherd kings," which lasted for numerous centuries. These Semitic conquerors never assimilated themselves with the Egyptians; they have been always appeared with hostility as foreigners and barbarians; and that they had been at remaining expelled by a popular rebellion about 1600 B.C.

But the Semites had come into Sumeria for suitable and all, the 2 races assimilated and the Babylonian Empire have become Semitic in its language and man or woman.

Ninety one

XVII

THE FIRST SEAGOING PEOPLES

THE earliest boats and ships need to have come into use a few twenty-five or thirty thousand years in the past. Man turned into likely paddling approximately on the water with a log of wooden or an inflated pores and skin to help him, at present day inside the beginnings of the Neolithic period. A basketwork boat included with pores and skin and caulked was utilized in Egypt and Sumeria from the beginnings of our know-how. Such boats are still used there. They are used to at the moment in Ireland and Wales and in Alaska; sealskin boats nevertheless make the crossing of Behring Straits. The hole log accompanied as gear improved. The building of boats and then ships got here in a herbal succession.

Perhaps the legend of Noah's Ark preserves the reminiscence of a few early take advantage of in shipbuilding, simply because the story of the Flood, so widely disbursed a few of the peoples of the arena, may be the culture of the flooding of the Mediterranean basin.

There were ships upon the Red Sea lengthy before the pyramids had been constructed, and there had been ships on the Mediterranean and Persian Gulf by 7000 B.C. Mostly these were the ships of fishermen, but some were already trading and pirate ships—for understanding what we do of mankind we may guess quite correctly that the first sailors plundered where they might and traded in which they needed to do so.

The seas on which these first ships adventured were inland seas on which the wind blew fitfully and which have been regularly at a lifeless calm for days collectively, so that sailing

did not develop beyond an accent use. It is handiest inside the ultimate 4 hundred years that the properly-rigged, ocean-going, sailing ship has advanced. The ships of the historical world have been basically rowing ships which hugged the shore and went into harbour at the first sign of difficult climate. As ships grew into huge galleys they caused a demand for struggle captives as galley slaves.

We have already cited the appearance of the Semitic people as wanderers and nomads inside the location of Syria and Arabia, and the way they conquered Sumeria and set up first the Akkadian after which the first Babylonian Empire. In the west those identical Semitic peoples ninety two have been taking to the sea. They installation a string of harbour cities along the Eastern coast of the Mediterranean, of which Tyre and Sidon had been the chief; and by the time of Hammurabi in Babylon, they had spread as investors, wanderers and colonizers over the entire Mediterranean basin. These sea Semites were known as the Phœnicians, They settled largely in Spain, pushing back the old Iberian Basque population and sending coasting expeditions through the straits of Gibraltar; and they installation colonies upon the north coast of Africa. Of Carthage, such a Phœnician towns, we shall have plenty more to inform later.

But the Phœnicians were not the first humans to have galleys in the Mediterranean waters. There became already a sequence of cities and cities the various islands and coasts of that sea belonging to a race or races apparently related by blood and language with the Basques to the west and the Berbers and Egyptians to the south, the Ægean peoples. These peoples ought to no longer be confused with the Greeks, who come a lot later into our tale; they were pre-Greek, but they'd cities in Greece and Asia Minor; Mycenæ and Troy as an instance, and that they had a outstanding and prosperous status quo at Cnossos in Crete.

It is simplest inside the ultimate half century that the industry of excavating archæologists has introduced the quantity and civilization of the Ægean peoples to our information. Cnossos has been maximum thoroughly explored; it turned into fortunately not succeeded through any city big sufficient to damage its ruins, and so it's miles our leader source of data about this once nearly forgotten civilization.

The history of Cnossos is going returned as a long way because the records of Egypt; the 2 international locations were trading actively across the sea via 4000 B.C. By 2500 B.C., that is among the time of Sargon I and Hammurabi, Cretan civilization turned into at its zenith.

Cnossos became no longer so much a town as a incredible palace for the Cretan monarch and his people. It become now not even fortified. It turned into handiest fortified later as the Phœnicians grew strong, and as a brand new and more horrible breed of pirates, the Greeks, got here upon the sea from the north.

THE TREASURE HOUSE AT MYCENÆ

THE TREASURE HOUSE AT MYCENÆ

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

The monarch was called Minos, because the Egyptian monarch changed into called Pharaoh; and he kept his kingdom in a palace equipped with running water, with bathrooms etc conveniences inclusive of we realize of in no other ancient remains. There he held excellent fairs and shows. There become bull-fighting, singularly just like the bull-fighting that ninety threenevertheless survives in Spain; there has been resemblance even inside the costumes of the bull-fighters; and there have been gymnastic presentations. The

women's garments had been remarkably present day in spirit; they wore corsets and flounced dresses. The pottery, the textile manufactures, the sculpture, portray, jewelry, ivory, metal and inlay paintings of those 94Cretans turned into regularly astonishingly lovely. And they'd a machine of writing, however that still remains to be deciphered.

This satisfied and sunny and civilized lifestyles lasted for some score of centuries. About 2000 B.C. Cnossos and Babylon abounded in secure and cultivated people who probable led very best lives. They had indicates and they had spiritual gala's, they'd home slaves to look after them and industrial slaves to make a profit for them. Life ought to have regarded very secure in Cnossos for such human beings, sunlit and girdled by way of the blue sea. Egypt of path need to have seemed as a substitute a declining us of a in the ones days under the guideline of her 1/2-barbaric shepherd kings, and if one took an interest in politics one ought to have noticed how the Semitic human beings seemed to be getting everywhere, ruling Egypt, ruling distant Babylon, building Nineveh on the higher Tigris, crusing west to the Pillars of Hercules (the straits of Gibraltar) and setting up their colonies on the ones remote coasts.

There have been some energetic arid curious minds in Cnossos, due to the fact afterward the Greeks instructed legends of a certain skilful Cretan artificer, Dædalus, who attempted to make some sort of flying machine, perhaps a glider, which collapsed and fell into the ocean.

It is exciting to be aware a number of the differences as well as the resemblances among the existence of Cnossos and our very own. To a Cretan gentleman of 2500 B.C. Iron become a rare steel which fell out of the sky and was curious rather than useful—for as yet best meteoric iron changed into recognised, iron had not been received from its ores. Compare that with

our present day scenario pervaded by using iron everywhere. The horse again might be a quite mythical creature to our Cretan, a type of extraordinary-ass which lived within the bleak northern lands a ways away past the Black Sea. Civilization for him dwelt chiefly in Ægean Greece and Asia Minor, wherein Lydians and Carians and Trojans lived a lifestyles and likely spoke languages like his own. There have been Phœnicians and Ægeans settled in Spain and North Africa, but the ones had been very remote regions to his imagination. Italy changed into nevertheless a desolate land included with dense forests; the brown-skinned Etruscans had no longer yet gone there from Asia Minor. And someday perhaps this Cretan gentleman went right down to the harbour and saw a captive who attracted his interest due to the fact he become very honest-complexioned and had blue eyes. Perhaps our Cretan tried to talk to him and was spoke back in an unintelligible gibberish. This creature got here from somewhere past the Black Sea and appeared to be an altogether benighted savage. But certainly he changed into an Aryan tribesman, of a race and tradition of which we shall soon have lots to inform, and the odd gibberish he spoke become to differentiate some day into Sanskrit, Persian, Greek, Latin, German, English and maximum of the leader languages of the arena.

THE PALACE AT CNOSSOS

THE PALACE AT CNOSSOS

The painted partitions of the Throne Room

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

Such changed into Cnossos at its zenith, wise, enterprising, vivid and happy. But approximately 1400 B.C. Catastrophe came possibly very abruptly upon its prosperity. The palace of Minos changed into destroyed, and its ruins have by no means been rebuilt or inhabited from that day to this. We do no longer know how this disaster came about. The excavators notice what appears to be scattered plunder and the marks of

the fireplace. But the lines of a completely adverse earthquake have additionally been found. Nature on my own can also have destroyed Cnossos, or the Greeks may additionally have finished what the earthquake began.

96

XVIII

EGYPT, BABYLON AND ASSYRIA

THE Egyptians had by no means submitted very willingly to the rule in their Semitic shepherd kings and approximately 1600 A.D. A lively patriotic movement expelled those foreigners. Followed a brand new segment or revival for Egypt, a duration recognised to Egyptologists because the New Empire. Egypt, which had now not been carefully consolidated earlier than the Hyksos invasion, become now a united usa; and the segment of subjugation and insurrection left her complete of military spirit. The Pharaohs became aggressive conquerors. They had now obtained the battle horse and the conflict chariot, which the Hyksos had added to them. Under Thothmes III and Amenophis III Egypt had prolonged her rule into Asia as some distance because the Euphrates.

We are entering now upon a thousand years of battle between the once quite separated civilizations of Mesopotamia and the Nile. At first Egypt turned into ascendant. The tremendous dynasties, the Seventeenth Dynasty, which covered Thothmes III and Amenophis III and IV and a exquisite queen Hatasu, and the Nineteenth, whilst Rameses II, intended via some to have been the Pharaoh of Moses, reigned for sixty-seven years, raised Egypt to excessive ranges of prosperity. In between there had been stages of depression for Egypt, conquest by way of the Syrians and later conquest by way of the Ethiopians from the South. In Mesopotamia Babylon

dominated, then the Hittites and the Syrians of Damascus rose to a transitory predominance; at one time the Syrians conquered Egypt; the fortunes of the Assyrians of Nineveh ebbed and flowed; sometimes the town was a conquered town; occasionally the Assyrians ruled in Babylon and assailed Egypt. Our space is too confined right here to tell of the comings and goings of the armies of the Egyptians and of the various Semitic powers of Asia Minor, Syria and Mesopotamia. They were armies now furnished with great droves of warfare chariots, for the pony—nevertheless used only for warfare and glory—had unfolded by this time into the old civilizations from Central Asia.

TEMPLE AT ABU SIMBEL

TEMPLE AT ABU SIMBEL

Showing the statues of Rameses II at front

Great conquerors seem in the dim light of that remote time and bypass, Tushratta, King of Mitanni, who captured Nineveh, Tiglath Pileser I of Assyria who conquered Babylon. At last the Assyrians have become the finest military energy of the time. Tiglath Pileser III conquered Babylon in 745 B.C. And founded what historians name the New Assyrian Empire. Iron had additionally come now into civilization out of the north; the Hittites, the precursors of the Armenians, had it first and communicated its use to the Assyrians, and an Assyrian usurper, Sargon II, armed his troops with it. Assyria have become the primary power to expound the doctrine of blood and iron. Sargon's son Sennacherib led an army to the borders of Egypt, and become defeated now not through military power however with the aid of the plague. Sennacherib's grandson Assurbanipal (who's also regarded in history ninety eight by means of his Greek name of Sardanapalus) did without a doubt overcome Egypt in 670 B.C. But Egypt become already a conquered united states of america then underneath an Ethiopian dynasty. Sardanapalus absolutely changed one conqueror with the aid of some other.

AVENUE OF SPHINXES

AVENUE OF SPHINXES

Leading from the Nile to the fantastic Temple of Karnak

Photo: D. McLeish

If one had a sequence of political maps of this long period of records, this programming language of ten centuries, we need to have Egypt increasing and contracting like an amoeba under a microscope, and we ought to see those various Semitic states of the Babylonians, the Assyrians, the Hittites and the Syrians coming and going, eating every other up and disgorging each different again. To the west of Asia Minor there might be little Ægean states like Lydia, whose capital turned into Sardis, and Caria. But after approximately 1200 B.C. And possibly in advance, a brand new set of names could come into the map of the historical international from one hundred the north-east and from the north-west. These would be the names of sure barbaric tribes, armed with iron weapons and the usage of horse-chariots, who had been becoming an exquisite anguish to the Ægean and Semitic civilizations at the northern borders. They all spoke editions of what once need to were the same language, Aryan.

99

THE GREAT HYPOSTYLE HALL AT KARNAK

THE GREAT HYPOSTYLE HALL AT KARNAK

Photo: D. McLeish

Round the north-east of the Black and Caspian Seas have been coming the Medes and Persians. Confused with those within the data of the time have been Scythians and Samatians. From north-east or north-west got here the Armenians, from the north-west of the ocean-barrier through the Balkan peninsula got here Cimmerians, Phrygians and the Hellenic tribes whom now we name the Greeks. They were raiders and robbers and

plunderers of cities, these Ayrans, east and west alike. They were all kindred and comparable peoples, hardy herdsmen who had taken to plunder. In the east they had been nevertheless handiest borderers and raiders, however inside the west they had been taking cities and riding out the civilized Ægean populations. The Ægean peoples have been so pressed that they have been seeking new houses in lands past the Aryan variety. Some were seeking a settlement inside the delta of the Nile and being repulsed through the Egyptians; a few, the Etruscans, seem to have sailed from Asia Minor to found a nation inside the forest wildernesses of middle Italy; some built themselves cities upon the south- east coasts of the Mediterranean and became later that humans regarded in history as the Philistines.

Of those Aryans who got here for this reason rudely upon the scene of the historical civilizations we are able to inform more fully in a later segment. Here we note clearly all this stir and emigration amidst the region of the historic civilizations, that turned into set up by using the swirl of the gradual and non-stop enhance of these Aryan barbarians out of the northern forests and wildernesses among 1600 and 600 B.C.

And in a phase to observe we ought to inform additionally of a bit Semitic humans, the Hebrews, inside the hills behind the Phœnician and Philistine coasts, who began to be of significance within the world toward the quit of this period. They produced a literature of very great significance in subsequent records, a collection of books, histories, poems, books of wisdom and prophetic works, the Hebrew Bible.

In Mesopotamia and Egypt the approaching of the Aryans did not reason fundamental adjustments until after 600 B.C. The flight of the one zero one Ægeans earlier than the Greeks or even the destruction of Cnossos must have appeared a totally remote disturbance to both the citizens of Egypt and of

Babylon. Dynasties came and went in those cradle states of civilization, however the most important tenor of human existence went on, with a gradual growth in refinement and complexity age by means of age. In Egypt the accumulated monuments of extra historic instances—the pyramids were already in their 1/3 thousand of years and a show for site visitors simply as they are to-day—had been supplemented through clean and awesome homes, more especially within the time of the seventeenth and nineteenth dynasties. The first rate temples at Karnak and Luxor date from this time. All the leader monuments of Nineveh, the first rate temples, the winged bulls with human heads, the reliefs of kings and chariots and lion hunts, were accomplished in these centuries between 1600 and 600 B.C., and this period additionally covers maximum of the splendours of Babylon.

FRIEZE SHOWING EGYPTIAN FEMALE SLAVES
CARRYING LUXURIOUS FOODS

FRIEZE SHOWING EGYPTIAN FEMALE SLAVES
CARRYING LUXURIOUS FOODS

Photo: Jacques Boyer

Both from Mesopotamia and Egypt we've plentiful public information, commercial enterprise money owed, stories, poetry and private correspondence. We realize that existence, for wealthy and influential humans in such towns as Babylon and the Egyptian Thebes, was already almost as delicate and as highly-priced as that of cozy and prosperous people to-day. Such humans lived an orderly and ceremonious lifestyles in lovely and beautifully supplied and adorned homes, wore richly embellished apparel and cute jewels; they had feasts and festivals, entertained each other with song and dancing, were waited upon via rather skilled servants, were cared for with the aid of docs and dentists. They did not tour very a good deal or very far, but boating excursions were a not unusual summer pride both on the Nile and on the Euphrates. The beast of burthen turned into the ass; the pony become

nevertheless used best in chariots for warfare and upon events of nation. The mule changed into nevertheless novel and the camel, although it became known in Mesopotamia, had no longer been introduced into Egypt. And there were few utensils of iron; copper and bronze remained the triumphing metals. Fine linen and cotton fabrics were called well as wool. But there has been no silk yet. Glass turned into regarded and beautifully coloured, however glass things were generally small. There changed into no clean glass and no optical use of glass. People had gold stoppings in their tooth however no spectacles on their noses.

One unusual contrast among the lifestyles of antique Thebes or Babylon and contemporary existence became the absence of coined cash. Most alternate changed into nonetheless finished with the aid of barter. Babylon was financially far ahead of Egypt. Gold and silver were used for exchange and kept in ingots; and there have been bankers, before coinage, who stamped their names and the weight on those lumps of precious metallic. A merchant or traveler could bring precious stones to sell to pay for his necessities. Most servants and people had been slaves who had been paid now not cash but in type. As money came in slavery declined.

A contemporary vacationer to these crowning cities of the ancient global might have ignored two very critical articles of food plan; there had been no hens and no eggs. A French prepare dinner would have observed small joy in Babylon. These things came from the East somewhere approximately the time of the closing Assyrian empire.

Religion like the entirety else had passed through fantastic refinement. Human sacrifice for instance had lengthy given that disappeared; animals or bread dummies have been substituted for the victim. (But the Phœnicians and specifically the residents of Carthage, their greatest settlement in Africa,

have been accused, later of immolating human beings.) When a notable leader had died inside the historical days it have been commonplace to sacrifice his better halves and slaves and damage spear and bow at his tomb in order that he must now not move unattended and unarmed within the spirit global. In Egypt there survived of this darkish tradition the first-rate custom of burying small models of house and keep and servants and cattle with the useless, fashions that deliver us to-day the liveliest awareness of the secure and cultivated life of those ancient human beings, three thousand years and extra in the past.

103

THE TEMPLE OF HORUS AT EDFU

THE TEMPLE OF HORUS AT EDFU

Such became the historic global before the coming of the Aryans out of the northern forests and plains. In India and China there were parallel developments. In the brilliant valleys of each those regions agricultural town states of brownish peoples have been growing up, but in India they do now not appear to have advanced or coalesced so rapidly because the metropolis states of Mesopotamia or Egypt. They have been closer the level of the historical Sumerians or of the Maya civilization of America. Chinese records has nonetheless to be modernized by way of Chinese pupils and cleared of much legendary rely. Probably China at this time become earlier of India. Contemporary with the seventeenth dynasty in Egypt, there has been a dynasty of emperors in China, the Shang dynasty, priest emperors over a loose-knit empire of subordinate kings. The leader duty of these early emperors was to carry out the seasonal sacrifices. Beautiful bronze vessels from the time of the Shang dynasty nevertheless exist, and their splendor and workmanship compel us to understand that many centuries of civilization need to have preceded their manufacture.

XIX

THE PRIMITIVE ARYANS

FOUR thousand years in the past, that is to say about 2000 B.C., primary and south-eastern Europe and important Asia had been likely warmer, moister and higher wooded than they're now. In those regions of the earth wandered a collection of tribes specially of the fair and blue-eyed Nordic race, sufficiently in contact with one another to speak merely variations of one not unusual language from the Rhine to the Caspian Sea. At that time they'll no longer have been a very severa humans, and their existence become unsuspected by way of the Babylonians to whom Hammurabi become giving legal guidelines, or by using the already ancient and cultivated land of Egypt which become tasting in the ones days for the first time the bitterness of overseas conquest.

These Nordic human beings have been destined to play a totally essential part certainly inside the international's history. They were a human beings of the parklands and the forest clearings; that they had no horses before everything but they had farm animals; when they wandered they placed their tents and other equipment on tough ox waggons; when they settled for a time they will have made huts of wattle and dust. They burnt their essential lifeless; they did no longer bury them ceremoniously as the brunette peoples did. They positioned the ashes in their extra leaders in urns after which made a incredible circular mound about them. These mounds are the "spherical barrows" that occur throughout north Europe. The brunette people, their predecessors, did not burn their lifeless however buried them in a sitting role in elongated mounds; the "lengthy barrows."

The Aryans raised crops of wheat, ploughing with oxen, but they did not relax with the aid of their plants; they might achieve and move on. They had bronze, and somewhere about 1500 B.C. They received iron. They might also have been the discoverers of iron smelting. And somewhere vaguely approximately that time additionally they got the pony—which to begin with they used simplest for draught functions. Their social lifestyles did not centre upon a temple like that of the more settled human beings of the Mediterranean, and their chief men have been leaders in preference to monks. They had an aristocratic social order as opposed to a divine and regal order; from an early stage they prominent positive families as leaderly and noble.

A hundred and five

A BEAUTIFUL ARCHAIC AMPHORA

A BEAUTIFUL ARCHAIC AMPHORA

Compare the horses and other animals with the Altamira drawing on p. Fifty four, and also with the Greek frieze, p. One hundred forty

They were a completely vocal humans. They enlivened their wanderings via feasts, at which there has been a lot drunkenness and at which a unique type of man, the bards, would sing and recite. They had no writing until they had come into touch with civilization, and the reminiscences of these bards have been their dwelling literature. This use of recited language as an leisure did a whole lot to make it an excellent and exquisite tool of expression, and to that no question the following predominance of the languages derived from Aryan is, in element, to be ascribed. Every Aryan humans had its mythical records crystallized in bardic recitations, epics, sagas and vedas, as they had been variously referred to as.

The social life of these humans targeted about the families of their main men. The hall of the leader in which they settled for a time become often a very capacious wood constructing. There were absolute confidence huts for herds and outlying farm buildings; but with most of the Aryan peoples this hall changed into the general centre, everybody went there to banquet and hear the bards and participate in games and discussions. Cowsheds and stabling surrounded it. The leader and his wife and so on might sleep on a dais or in an upper gallery; the commoner sort slept approximately everywhere, as people nevertheless do in Indian households. Except for weapons, ornaments, gear and suchlike private possessions there has been a sort of patriarchal communism inside the tribe. The leader owned the livestock and grazing lands inside the commonplace interest; forest and rivers were the wild.

This turned into the fashion of the people who have been growing and multiplying over the top notch spaces of central Europe and west important Asia at some stage in the increase of the extremely good civilization of Mesopotamia and the Nile, and whom we find pressing upon the heliolithic peoples everywhere in the 2nd millennium before Christ. They were coming into France and Britain and into Spain. They pushed westward in waves. The first of those people who reached Britain and Ireland were armed with bronze weapons. They exterminated or subjugated the those who had made the terrific stone monuments of Carnac in Brittany and Stonehenge and Avebury in England. They reached Ireland. They are referred to as the Goidelic Celts. The 1072nd wave of a closely kindred people, perhaps intermixed with other racial factors, delivered iron with it into Great Britain, and is referred to as the wave of Brythonic Celts. From them the Welsh derive their language.

THE MOUND OF NIPPUR

THE MOUND OF NIPPUR

The web page of a metropolis which latest excavations have proved up to now from as a minimum as early as 5000 B.C., and in all likelihood a thousand years earlier

Photo: Underwood & Underwood

Kindred Celtic peoples had been urgent southward into Spain and entering touch no longer most effective with the heliolithic Basque folks who nevertheless occupied the U.S.A. But with the Semitic Phœnician colonies of the ocean coast. An intently allied collection of tribes, the Italians, were making their way down the nonetheless wild and wooded Italian peninsula. They did not usually conquer. In the 8th century B.C. Rome seems in history, a trading metropolis at the Tiber, inhabited by way of Aryan Latins however below the guideline of Etruscan nobles and kings.

At the opposite extremity of the Aryan variety there was a similar progress southward of comparable tribes. Aryan peoples, talking Sanskrit, had come down via the western passes into North India long before 1000 B.C. There they came into touch with a primordial brunette civilization, the Dravidian civilization, and learnt much from it. Other Aryan tribes seem to have spread over the mountain loads of Central Asia some distance to the east of the present variety of such peoples. In Eastern Turkestan there are still honest, blue-eyed Nordic tribes, but now they speak Mongolian tongues.

Between the Black and Caspian Seas the ancient Hittites have been submerged and “Aryanized” with the aid of the Armenians earlier than 1000 B.C., and the Assyrians and Babylonians had been already aware of a new and ambitious preventing barbarism at the north-jap frontiers, a set of tribes amidst which the Scythians, the Medes and the Persians remain as brilliant names.

But it was through the Balkan peninsula that Aryan tribes made their first heavy thrust into the heart of the antique-world civilization. They have been already coming southward and crossing into Asia Minor many centuries before one thousand B.C. First got here a group of tribes of whom the Phrygians had been the most conspicuous, after which in succession the Æolic, the Ionic and the Dorian Greeks. By a thousand B.C. They'd wiped out the historic Ægean civilization both within the mainland of Greece and in maximum of the Greek islands; the towns of Mycenæ and Tiryns had been obliterated and Cnossos was almost forgotten. The Greeks had taken to the ocean earlier than one thousand A.D., they'd settled in Crete and Rhodes, and that they were founding colonies in Sicily and the south of Italy after the style of the Phœnician buying and selling towns that were dotted alongside the Mediterranean coasts.

So it was, at the same time as Tiglath Pileser III and Sargon II and Sardanapalus have been ruling in Assyria and combating with Babylonia and Syria and Egypt, the Aryan peoples had been gaining knowledge of the methods of civilization and making it over for his or her personal purposes in Italy and Greece and north Persia. The subject of records from the 9th century B.C. A.D. Onward for 6 centuries is the tale of how those Aryan peoples grew to strength and organization and the way at last they subjugated the complete Ancient World, Semitic, Ægean and Egyptian alike. In form the Aryan peoples were altogether triumphant; but the struggle of Aryan, Semitic and Egyptian thoughts and techniques became continued lengthy after the sceptre became in Aryan hands. It is certainly a warfare that is going on thru all of the rest of records and nonetheless in a manner maintains to at the present time.

THE LAST BABYLONIAN EMPIRE AND THE EMPIRE OF DARIUS I

WE have already noted how Assyria have become a high-quality army electricity underneath Tiglath Pileser III and beneath the usurper Sargon II. Sargon changed into now not this man's unique name; he adopted it to flatter the conquered Babylonians through reminding them of that ancient founding father of the Akkadian Empire, Sargon I, thousand years before his time. Babylon, for all that it was a conquered town, become of extra populace and significance than Nineveh, and its excellent god Bel Marduk and its traders and monks needed to be dealt with with politeness. In Mesopotamia within the 8th century B.C. A.D. We're already some distance past the barbaric days while the seize of a city meant loot and massacre. Conquerors sought to propitiate and win the conquered. For a century and a half after Sargon the new Assyrian empire endured and, as we have cited, Assurbanipal (Sardanapalus) held at the least lower Egypt.

But the electricity and solidarity of Assyria waned hastily. Egypt by an effort threw off the foreigner beneath a Pharaoh Psammetichus I, and below Necho II tried a war of conquest in Syria. By that point Assyria turned into grappling with foes closer handy, and could make but a bad resistance. A Semitic people from south-east Mesopotamia, the Chaldeans, combined with Aryan Medes and Persians from the north-east against Nineveh, and in 606 B.C.—for now we're coming right down to precise chronology—took that town.

There was a department of the spoils of Assyria. A Median Empire become installation in the north underneath Cyaxares. It covered Nineveh, and its capital turned into Ecbatana. Eastward it reached to the borders of India. To the south of this in a high-quality crescent turned into a brand new Chaldean Empire, the Second Babylonian Empire, which rose to a

completely super diploma of wealth and energy below the rule of thumb of Nebuchadnezzar the Great (the Nebuchadnezzar of the Bible). The closing excellent days, the one hundred ten finest days of all, for Babylon started. For a time the two Empires remained at peace, and the daughter of Nebuchadnezzar became married to Cyaxares.

Meanwhile Necho II was pursuing his smooth conquests in Syria. He had defeated and slain King Josiah of Judah, a small u . S . Of which there may be more to inform currently, at the war of Megiddo in 608 B.C., and he pushed directly to the Euphrates to come across no longer a decadent Assyria however a nascent Babylonia. The Chaldeans dealt very vigorously with the Egyptians. Necho was routed and driven returned to Egypt, and the Babylonian frontier driven all the way down to the historical Egyptian boundaries.

Map showing the relation of the Median and Second Babylonian

(Chaldæan) Empires inside the reign of Nebuchadnezzar the Great

From 606 till 589 B.C. The Second Babylonian Empire flourished insecurely. It flourished so long because it stored the peace with the stronger, hardier Median Empire to the north. And all through these sixty-seven years no longer most effective lifestyles however learning flourished within the historic city.

Map: The Empire of Darius (tribute-paying nations) at its greatest quantity

Even below the Assyrian monarchs and specially beneath Sardanapalus, Babylon had been a scene of first rate highbrow activity. 111 Sardanapalus, though an Assyrian, have been pretty Babylon-ized. He made a library, a library not of paper

however of the clay tablets that were used for writing in Mesopotamia when you consider that early Sumerian days. His series has been unearthed and is possibly the maximum valuable save of historic fabric inside the world. The last of the Chaldean line of Babylonian monarchs, Nabonidus, had even keener literary tastes. He patronized antiquarian researches, and whilst a date became worked out by way of his investigators for the accession of Sargon I he venerated the truth by means of inscriptions. But there were many signs and symptoms of disunion in his empire, and he sought to centralize it through bringing some of the diverse nearby gods to Babylon and putting in temples to them there. This tool become to be practised pretty efficiently by means of the Romans in later instances, but in Babylon it roused the jealousy of the effective priesthood of Bel Marduk, the dominant god of the Babylonians. They cast approximately for a probable opportunity to Nabonidus and located it in Cyrus the Persian, the ruler of the adjacent Median Empire. Cyrus had already prominent himself by using conquering Croesus, the rich king of Lydia in Eastern Asia Minor. 112He got here up against Babylon, there was a war outdoor the partitions, and the gates of the city had been opened to him (538 B.C.). His soldiers entered the town with out fighting. The crown prince Belshazzar, the son of Nabonidus, turned into feasting, the Bible relates, whilst a hand seemed and wrote in letters of fireplace upon the wall these mystical words: "Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin," which become interpreted by way of the prophet Daniel, whom he summoned to study the riddle, as "God has numbered thy nation and finished it; thou artwork weighed in the balance and discovered wanting and thy country is given to the Medes and Persians." Possibly the clergymen of Bel Marduk knew some thing about that writing at the wall. Belshazzar was killed that night, says the Bible. Nabonidus changed into taken prisoner, and the career of the city become so peaceful that the offerings of Bel Marduk persisted with out intermission.

PERSIAN MONARCH

PERSIAN MONARCH

From the ruins of Persepolis

Photo: Miss F. Biggs

Thus it became the Babylonian and Median empires had been united. Cambyses, the son of Cyrus, subjugated Egypt.

Cambyses went mad and became by accident killed, and turned into presently succeeded by Darius the Mede, Darius I, the son of Hystaspes, one of the chief councillors of Cyrus.

113

THE RUINS OF PERSEPOLIS

THE RUINS OF PERSEPOLIS

The capital metropolis of the Persian Empire; burnt by way of Alexander the Great

Photo: Major W. F. P. Rodd

THE GREAT PORCH OF XERXES, AT PERSEPOLIS

THE GREAT PORCH OF XERXES, AT PERSEPOLIS

Photo: Major W. F. P. Rodd

The Persian Empire of Darius I, the first of the new Aryan empires within the seat of the antique civilizations, changed into the best empire the arena had hitherto seen. It included all Asia Minor and Syria, all of the antique Assyrian and Babylonian empires, Egypt, the Caucasus and Caspian regions, Media, Persia, and it extended into India as far as the Indus. Such an empire became possible due to the fact the pony and rider and the chariot and the made-road had now been brought into the world. Hitherto the ass and ox and the camel for desolate tract use had afforded the swiftest technique of shipping. Great arterial roads had been made via the Persian rulers to keep their new empire, and post horses were continually in awaiting the imperial messenger or the visitor

with an respectable allow. Moreover the sector become now starting to use coined money, which greatly facilitated trade and sex. But the capital of this massive empire changed into no longer Babylon. In the long term the priesthood of Bel Marduk received nothing with the aid of their treason. Babylon even though nonetheless crucial turned into now a declining city, and the amazing cities of the brand new empire have been Persepolis and Susa and Ecbatana. The capital was Susa. Nineveh turned into already abandoned and sinking into ruins.

115

XXI

THE EARLY HISTORY OF THE JEWS

AND now we can tell of the Hebrews, a Semitic human beings, no longer so essential in their personal time as of their influence upon the later records of the sector. They had been settled in Judea long earlier than 1000 B.C., and their capital metropolis after that point changed into Jerusalem. Their tale is interwoven with that of the amazing empires on either facet of them, Egypt to the south and the converting empires of Syria, Assyria and Babylon to the north. Their usa changed into an inevitable excessive road among those latter powers and Egypt.

Their significance within the global is due to the truth that they produced a written literature, a global records, a collection of legal guidelines, chronicles, psalms, books of information, poetry and fiction and political utterances which became at closing what Christians realize because the Old Testament, the Hebrew Bible. This literature appears in history within the fourth or 5th century B.C.

Probably this literature was first prepared in Babylon. We have already instructed how the Pharaoh, Necho II, invaded the Assyrian Empire whilst Assyria turned into fighting for existence towards Medes, Persians and Chaldeans. Josiah King of Judah antagonized him, and became defeated and slain at Megiddo (608 B.C.). Judah became a tributary to Egypt, and while Nebuchadnezzar the Great, the new Chaldean king in Babylon, rolled lower back Necho into Egypt, he attempted to manipulate Judah by using setting up puppet kings in Jerusalem. The experiment failed, the human beings massacred his Babylonian officers, and he then determined to interrupt up this little kingdom altogether, which had lengthily been gambling off Egypt towards the northern empire. Jerusalem became sacked and burnt, and the remnant of the people became carried off captive to Babylon.

116 There they remained until Cyrus took Babylon (538 B.C.). He then accrued them together and sent them back to resettle their u . S . A . And rebuild the partitions and temple of Jerusalem.

Before that time the Jews do no longer seem to have been a completely civilized or united people. Probably most effective a completely few of them ought to examine or write. In their own history one by no means hears of the early books of the Bible being examined; the first mention of a e book is inside the time of Josiah. The Babylonian captivity civilized them and consolidated them. They returned aware of their very own literature, an acutely self-conscious and political humans.

Their Bible at that time appears to have consisted handiest of the Pentateuch, this is to say the primary five books of the Old Testament as we know it. In addition, as separate books they already had the various other books which have considering

been included with the Pentateuch into the existing Hebrew Bible, Chronicles, the Psalms and Proverbs for example.

The accounts of the Creation of the World, of Adam and Eve and of the Flood, with which the Bible begins, run carefully parallel with similar Babylonian legends; they seem to have been a part of the not unusual ideals of all the Semitic peoples. So too the tales of Moses and of Samson have Sumerian and Babylonian parallels. But with the tale of Abraham and onward starts something extra unique to the Jewish race.

Abraham can also have lived as early as the days of Hammurabi in Babylon. He became a patriarchal Semitic nomad. To the book of Genesis the reader should move for the story of his wanderings and for the stories of his sons and grandchildren and how they have become captive within the Land of Egypt. He travelled via Canaan, and the God of Abraham, says the Bible tale, promised this smiling land of prosperous towns to him and to his youngsters.

And after an extended sojourn in Egypt and after fifty years of wandering in the barren region below the leadership of Moses, the kids of Abraham, grown now to a number of twelve tribes, invaded the land of Canaan from the Arabian deserts to the East. They may also have carried out this somewhere between 1600 B.C. and 1300 B.C.; there are no Egyptian facts of Moses nor of Canaan at this time to help out the tale. But at any price they did not achieve conquering any greater than the hilly backgrounds of the promised land. The coast became now inside the fingers, no longer of the Canaanites but of inexperienced persons, those Aegean peoples, the Philistines; and their cities, Gaza, Gath, Ashdod, Ascalon and Joppa efficaciously withstood the Hebrew attack. For many generations the kids of Abraham remained an obscure human beings of the hilly returned united states of america engaged in incessant bickerings with the Philistines and with the kindred

tribes approximately them, the Moabites, the Midianites and so on. The reader will locate in the e-book of Judges a report of their struggles and screw ups at some stage in this era. For very in large part it's miles a record of screw ups and disasters frankly told.

Map: The Land of the Hebrews

118For maximum of this era the Hebrews have been dominated, to date as there was any rule among them, by way of priestly judges selected with the aid of the elders of the human beings, however at remaining somewhen towards one thousand B.C. They chose themselves a king, Saul, to steer them in conflict. But Saul's main was no outstanding development upon the leading of the Judges; he perished below the hail of Philistine arrows on the warfare of Mount Gilboa, his armour went into the temple of the Philistine Venus, and his frame turned into nailed to the partitions of Beth-shan.

MOUND AT BABYLON

THE MOUND AT BABYLON

Beneath that are the stays of a brilliant palace of Nebuchadnezzar

Photo: Underwood & Underwood

His successor David turned into greater successful and greater politic. With David dawned the only length of prosperity the Hebrew peoples were ever to know. It became based on a close alliance with the Phœnician metropolis of Tyre, whose King Hiram seems to have been a person of very top notch intelligence and enterprise. He wished to secure a exchange route to the Red Sea thru the Hebrew hill united states of america. Normally Phœnician alternate went to the Red Sea by way of Egypt, but Egypt turned into in a nation of profound sickness at this 119time; there may additionally have been different obstructions to Phœnician change alongside this line,

and at any charge Hiram installed the very closest members of the family both with David and together with his son and successor Solomon. Under Hiram's auspices the partitions, palace and temple of Jerusalem arose, and in return Hiram constructed and launched his ships on the Red Sea. A very tremendous exchange surpassed northward and southward via Jerusalem. And Solomon achieved a prosperity and elegance extraordinary in the experience of his human beings. He become even given a daughter of Pharaoh in marriage.

But it's far well to preserve the share of factors in mind. At the climax of his glories Solomon became simplest a little subordinate king in a bit city. His strength turned into so transitory that within a few years of his demise, Shishak the first Pharaoh of the twenty-second dynasty, had taken Jerusalem and looted most of its splendours. The account of Solomon's class given within the books of Kings and Chronicles is puzzled by means of many critics. They say that it was added to and exaggerated by way of the patriotic satisfaction of later writers. But the Bible account read cautiously is not so overwhelming because it seems at the first analyzing. Solomon's temple, if one works out the measurements, might go inside a small suburban church, and his fourteen hundred chariots give up to impress us whilst we analyze from an Assyrian monument that his successor Ahab sent a contingent of two thousand to the Assyrian military. It is also it seems that appear from the Bible narrative that Solomon spent himself in show and overtaxed and overworked his human beings. At his death the northern part of his country broke off from Jerusalem and became the independent nation of Israel. Jerusalem remained the capital city of Judah.

A hundred and twenty

THE ISHTAR GATEWAY, BABYLON

THE ISHTAR GATEWAY, BABYLON

The bulls are in richly coloured teeth on baked brick

Photo: Underwood & Underwood

The prosperity of the Hebrew people changed into quick-lived. Hiram died, and the help of Tyre ceased to reinforce Jerusalem. Egypt grew robust once more. The records of the kings of Israel and the kings of Judah turns into a history of two little states floor between, first, Syria, then Assyria after which Babylon to the north and Egypt to the south. It is a tale of disasters and of deliverances that simplest behind schedule disaster. It is a story of barbaric kings ruling a barbaric people. In 721 B.C. The dominion of Israel changed into swept away into captivity through the Assyrians and its people totally misplaced to history. Judah struggled 121on until in 604 B.C., as we've got told, it shared the destiny of Israel. There may be info open to criticism in the Bible tale of Hebrew records from the days of the Judges onward, however at the complete it's miles clearly a true story which squares with all that has been learnt inside the excavation of Egypt and Assyria and Babylon throughout the past century.

It was in Babylon that the Hebrew people got their history collectively and evolved their subculture. The folks that got here returned to Jerusalem at the command of Cyrus had been a completely unique human beings in spirit and understanding from people who had long gone into captivity. They had learnt civilization. In the improvement of their bizarre man or woman a very fantastic component become played through sure men, a brand new type of guys, the Prophets, to whom we have to now direct our interest. These Prophets mark the arrival of new and exquisite forces within the constant development of human society.

PRIESTS AND PROPHETS IN JUDEA

THE fall of Assyria and Babylon have been only the first of a chain of screw ups that had been to happen to the Semitic peoples. In the 7th century B.C. It would have seemed as even though the entire civilized world turned into to be dominated with the aid of Semitic rulers. They dominated the extremely good Assyrian empire and they had conquered Egypt; Assyria, Babylon, Syria have been all Semitic, speaking languages that were jointly intelligible. The alternate of the arena become in Semitic palms. Tyre, Sidon, the excellent mom cities of the Phœnician coast, had thrown out colonies that grew at remaining to even greater share in Spain, Sicily and Africa. Carthage, founded before 800 B.C., had risen to a populace of more than a million. It became for a time the best city on the earth. Its ships went to Britain and out into the Atlantic. They might also have reached Madeira. We have already stated how Hiram co-operated with Solomon to construct ships at the Red Sea for the Arabian and possibly for the Indian trade. In the time of the Pharaoh Necho, a Phœnician excursion sailed completely spherical Africa.

At that time the Aryan peoples had been still barbarians. Only the Greeks were reconstructing a new civilization of the ruins of the one they had destroyed, and the Medes were turning into “bold,” as an Assyrian inscription calls them, in imperative Asia. In 800 B.C. No one could have prophesied that before the 1/3 century B.C. Each trace of Semitic dominion might be wiped out by using Aryan-speaking conquerors, and that everywhere the Semitic peoples might be subjects or tributaries or scattered altogether. Everywhere except within the northern deserts of Arabia, where the Bedouin adhered progressively to the nomadic manner of life, the ancient way of lifestyles of the Semites earlier than Sargon I and his Akkadians went down to conquer Sumeria. But the Arab Bedouin had been in no way conquered by way of Aryan masters.

123 Now of a lot of these civilized Semites who were overwhelmed and overrun in these 5 eventful centuries one human being most effectively held collectively and clung to its ancient traditions and that became this little human, the Jew, who has been sent returned to build their city of Jerusalem by using Cyrus the Persian. And they were capable of trying this, due to the fact they had got together this literature of theirs, their Bible, in Babylon. It isn't so much the Jew who made the Bible as the Bible which made the Jew. Running via this Bible were sure thoughts, unique from the ideas of the human beings approximately them, very stimulating and maintaining ideas, to which they have been destined to grasp through five and twenty centuries of worry, adventure and oppression.

Foremost of those Jewish ideas turned into this, that their God turned into invisible and far off, an invisible God in a temple not made with hands, a Lord of Righteousness during the earth. All other peoples had national gods embodied in snapshots that lived in temples. If the image was smashed and the temple razed, presently that god died out. But this became a new concept, this God of the Jew, in the heavens, high above monks and sacrifices. And this God of Abraham, the Jew believed, had selected them to be his atypical people, to restore Jerusalem and make it the capital of Righteousness inside the World. They had been a human exalted by way of their feel of a commonplace future. This belief saturated all of them once they lower back to Jerusalem after the captivity in Babylon.

Is it any miracle that in their days of overthrow and subjugation many Babylonians and Syrians and so forth and afterward many Phoenicians, speak almost the identical language and having infinite customs, conduct, tastes and traditions in common, should be attracted with the aid of this inspiring cult and should be trying to find to proportion in its

fellowship and its promise? After the autumn of Tyre, Sidon, Carthage and the Spanish Phœnician towns, the Phœnicians all of sudden vanish from records; and as unexpectedly we find, now not clearly in Jerusalem but in Spain, Africa, Egypt, Arabia, the East, anywhere the Phœnicians had set their feet, communities of Jews. And they have been all held collectively through the Bible and by using the analyzing of the Bible. Jerusalem turned into from the primary best their nominal capital; their real city was this ebook of books. This is a brand new kind of issue in history. It is something of which the seeds had been sown lengthy earlier than, while the Sumerians and Egyptians began to turn their hieroglyphics into writing. The Jews were a brand new issue, a people without a king and presently without a temple (for as we shall tell Jerusalem itself changed into damaged up in 70 A.D.), held together and consolidated out of heterogeneous factors by way of not anything but the strength of the written phrase.

And this intellectual welding of the Jews turned into neither deliberate nor foreseen nor performed by means of both clergymen or statesmen. Not best a new kind of community however a new kind of guy comes into records with the improvement of the Jews. In the times of Solomon the Hebrews gave the look of turning into a touch humans just like another little human beings of that point clustering around courtroom and temple, ruled by way of the understanding of the priest and led via the ambition of the king. But already, the reader may analyze from the Bible, this new sort of man of which we talk, the Prophet, become in evidence.

As troubles thicken round the divided Hebrews the significance of these Prophets increases.

THE BLACK OBELISK OF SHALMANESER II

THE BLACK OBELISK OF SHALMANESER II

This obelisk (within the British Museum) of the King of Assyria mentions, in cuneiform, "Jehu the son of Omri." Panel displaying Jewish captives bringing tribute

What have been these Prophets? They have been guys of the most diverse origins. The Prophet Ezekiel turned into of the priestly caste and the Prophet Amos wore the goatskin mantle of a shepherd, but all had this in not unusual, that they gave allegiance to no person but to the God of Righteousness and that they spoke immediately to the humans. They came with out licence or consecration. "Now the phrase of the Lord got here unto me;" that became the components. They had been intensely political. They exhorted the humans against Egypt, "that damaged reed," or against Assyria or Babylon; they denounced the indolence of the priestly order or the flagrant sins of the King. Some of them turned their interest to what we have to now call "social reform." The wealthy were "grinding the faces of the bad," the high-priced have been eating the children's bread; wealthy people made pals with and imitated the splendours and vices of foreigners; and this turned into hateful to Jehovah, the God of Abraham, who could actually punish this land.

ANOTHER PANEL OF THE BLACK OBELISK

ANOTHER PANEL OF THE BLACK OBELISK

Captive Princes making obeisance to Shalmaneser II

These fulminations were written down and preserved and studied. They went anywhere the Jews went, and anywhere they went they spread a brand new spiritual spirit. They carried the common guy beyond priest and temple, beyond court and king and brought him head to head with the Rule of Righteousness. That is their superb importance within the history of mankind. In the top notch utterances of Isaiah the prophetic voice rises to a pitch of excellent anticipation and foreshadows the entire earth united and at peace below one God. Therein the Jewish prophecies culminate.

All the Prophets did not talk on this fashion, and the wise reader of the prophetic books will discover a great deal hate in them, plenty prejudice, and lots with a view to remind him of the propaganda pamphlets of the prevailing time. Nevertheless it is the Hebrew Prophets of the length spherical and about the Babylonian captivity who mark the advent of a new electricity inside the international, the strength of individual moral attraction, of an attraction to the unfastened moral sense of mankind in opposition to the fetish sacrifices and slavish loyalties that had hitherto bridled and harnessed our race.

127

XXIII

THE GREEKS

NOW while after Solomon (whose reign became possibly about 960 B.C.) the divided kingdoms of Israel and Judah were struggling destruction and deportation, and while the Jewish people had been growing their way of life in captivity in Babylon, every other high-quality electricity over the human mind, the Greek culture, changed into also bobbing up. While the Hebrew prophets were working out a brand new feel of direct moral responsibility between the humans and an everlasting and conventional God of Right, the Greek philosophers had been training the human thoughts in a new approach and spirit of highbrow journey.

The Greek tribes as we've instructed have been a branch of the Aryan- speakme stem. They had come down most of the Ægean towns and islands some centuries earlier than 1000 B.C. They had been possibly already in southward movement

before the Pharaoh Thothmes hunted his first elephants beyond the conquered Euphrates. For in those days there had been elephants in Mesopotamia and lions in Greece.

It is possible that it turned into a Greek raid that burnt Cnossos, however there are not any Greek legends of any such victory although there are stories of Minos and his palace (the Labyrinth) and of the talent of the Cretan artificers.

128

STATUE OF MELEAGER

STATUE OF MELEAGER

Note the progress in plastic power from the sooner wood statue on left

Photo: Sebah & Foailier

Like most of the Aryans these Greeks had singers and reciters whose performances had been an essential social hyperlink, and these exceeded down from the barbaric beginnings of their human beings first rate epics, the Iliad, telling how a league of Greek tribes besieged and took and sacked the town of Troy in Asia Minor, and the Odyssey, being an extended journey story of the return of the sage captain, Odysseus, from Troy to his own island. These epics were written down somewhen inside the eighth or 7th century B.C., whilst the Greeks had received using an alphabet from their greater civilized neighbours, however they ¹²⁹are alleged to were in lifestyles very lots earlier. Formerly they have been ascribed to a specific blind bard, Homer, who become imagined to have sat down and composed them as Milton composed Paradise Lost. Whether there sincerely turned into any such poet, whether or not he composed or handiest wrote down and polished these epics and so forth, is a favourite quarrelling floor for the erudite. We want now not concern ourselves with such bickerings here. The component that subjects from our factor of view is that the Greeks were in possession of their epics within the 8th century

B.C., and that they were a not unusual possession and a hyperlink among their various tribes, giving them a sense of fellowship as in opposition to the outer barbarians. They have been a set of kindred peoples connected by using the spoken and afterwards through the written word, and sharing not unusual beliefs of courage and behavior.

The epics confirmed the Greeks a barbaric human beings with out iron, with out writing, and still not living in cities. They appear to have lived in the beginning in open villages of huts around the halls of their chiefs out of doors the ruins of the Ægean cities that they had destroyed. Then they started to wall their towns and to adopt the concept of temples from the human beings they had conquered. It has been stated that the cities of the primitive civilizations grew up approximately the altar of a few tribal god, and that the wall become brought; within the cities of the Greeks the wall preceded the temple. They commenced to exchange and ship out colonies. By the seventh century B.C. A new series of towns had grown up within the valleys and islands of Greece, forgetful of the Ægean towns and civilization that had preceded them; Athens, Sparta, Corinth, Thebes, Samos, Miletus among the leader. There had been already Greek settlements along the coast of the Black Sea and in Italy and Sicily. The heel and toe of Italy changed into referred to as Magna Græcia. Marseilles was a Greek city mounted on the site of an in advance Phœnician colony.

Now international locations which are extremely good plains or that have as a chief method of transport some top notch river just like the Euphrates or Nile have a tendency to come to be united under some commonplace rule. The cities of Egypt and the towns of Sumeria, as an example, ran together under one device of presidency. But the Greek peoples had been split among islands and mountain valleys; each Greece and Magna Græcia are very mountainous; and the tendency turned into all the different manner. When the a hundred

thirty Greeks come into records they are divided up into a number of little states which confirmed no symptoms of coalescence. They are exceptional even in race. Some consist mainly of citizens of this or that Greek tribe, Ionic, Æolian or Doric; some have a mingled populace of Greeks and descendants of the pre-Greek "Mediterranean" folks; a few have an unmixed unfastened citizenship of Greeks lording it over an enslaved conquered population just like the "Helots" in Sparta. In some the vintage leaderly Aryan households have emerge as a near aristocracy; in a few there is a democracy of all of the Aryan residents; in some there are elected or maybe hereditary kings, in a few usurpers or tyrants.

RUINS OF THE GREAT TEMPLE OF ZEUS AT OLYMPIA

RUINS OF THE GREAT TEMPLE OF ZEUS AT OLYMPIA

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

And the same geographical conditions that saved the Greek states divided and numerous, saved them small. The largest states had been smaller than many English counties, and it is doubtful if the populace of any in their towns ever handed a third of 1,000,000. Few came up even to 50,000. There had been unions of interest and sympathy however no coalescences. Cities made leagues and alliances as 131 exchange improved, and small cities positioned themselves under the protection of awesome ones. Yet all Greece became held collectively in a positive community of feeling by way of things, through the epics and through the custom of taking component every fourth 12 months within the athletic contests at Olympia. This did no longer prevent wars and feuds, but it mitigated something of the savagery of battle between them, and a truce covered all travelers to and from the video games. As time went at the sentiment of a common historical past grew and the number of states collaborating inside the Olympic video games multiplied until at ultimate no longer best Greeks but competition from the intently kindred countries of Epirus and Macedonia to the north were admitted.

The Greek cities grew in change and importance, and the first-class of their civilization rose steadily in the seventh and sixth centuries B.C. Their social life differed in lots of exciting factors from the social existence of the Ægean and river valley civilizations. They had first-rate temples but the priesthood changed into no longer the extremely good conventional body it changed into within the towns of the older world, the repository of all understanding, the storehouse of thoughts. They had leaders and noble households, but no quasi-divine monarch surrounded by using an elaborately organized court. Rather their business enterprise changed into aristocratic, with main families which kept every other in order. Even their so-referred to as “democracies” had been aristocratic; every citizen had a percentage in public affairs and came to the assembly in a democracy, but everyone become no longer a citizen. The Greek democracies have been not like our cutting-edge “democracies” wherein everybody has a vote. Many of the Greek democracies had a few hundred or a few thousand citizens after which many hundreds of slaves, freedmen and so on, with no proportion in public affairs. Generally in Greece affairs were within the arms of a network of sizeable men. Their kings and their tyrants alike have been just guys set in front of other guys or usurping a management; they have been now not quasi-divine overmen like Pharaoh or Minos or the monarchs of Mesopotamia. Both idea and government therefore had a freedom underneath Greek situations inclusive of they had regarded in not one of the older civilizations. The Greeks had brought down into cities the individualism, the personal initiative of the wandering existence of the northern parklands. They have been the primary republicans of significance in records.

132

THE TEMPLE OF NEPTUNE (POSEIDON), PÆSTUM,
SICILY

THE TEMPLE OF NEPTUNE (POSEIDON), PÆSTUM, SICILY

Photo: Alinari

And we find that as they emerge from a situation of barbaric war a new issue becomes apparent of their highbrow lifestyles. We discover men who aren't clergymen seeking and recording understanding and enquiring into the mysteries of existence and being, in a manner that has hitherto been the elegant privilege of priesthood or the presumptuous enjoyment of kings. We discover already inside the sixth century B.C.—possibly while Isaiah was nevertheless prophesying in Babylon—such guys as Thales and Anaximander of Miletus and Heraclitus of Ephesus, who were what we ought to now call independent gents, giving their minds to wise questionings of the sector in which we live, asking what its actual nature became, whence it got here and what its destiny is probably, and refusing all prepared-made or evasive solutions. Of those questionings of the universe by the Greek mind, we will have extra to mention a bit later on this history. These Greek enquirers 133who begin to be terrific in the sixth century B.C. Are the primary philosophers, the primary “expertise-lovers,” within the world.

And it may be noted right here how important a century this sixth century B.C. Was in the records of humanity. For now not only had been these Greek philosophers beginning the research for clear ideas about this universe and guy's place in it and Isaiah carrying Jewish prophecy to its sublimest stages, however as we shall tell later Gautama Buddha was then coaching in India and Confucius and Lao Tse in China. From Athens to the Pacific the human mind was astir.

XXIV

THE WARS OF THE GREEKS AND PERSIANS

WHILE the Greeks in the towns in Greece, South Italy and Asia Minor were embarking upon unfastened intellectual enquiry and even as in Babylon and Jerusalem the last of the Hebrew prophets were growing a free judgment of right and wrong for mankind, adventurous Aryan peoples, the Medes and the Persians, had been in ownership of the civilization of the historical world and have been creating a superb empire, the Persian empire, which changed into a ways large in quantity than any empire the sector had seen hitherto. Under Cyrus, Babylon and the wealthy and ancient civilization of Lydia have been delivered to the Persian rule; the Phœnician cities of the Levant and all the Greek towns in Asia Minor have been made tributary, Cambyses had subjected Egypt, and Darius I, the Mede, the 1/3 of the Persian rulers (521 B.C.), located himself monarch as it regarded of all of the world. His couriers rode along with his decrees from the Dardanelles to the Indus and from Upper Egypt to Central Asia.

The Greeks in Europe, it's far true, Italy, Carthage, Sicily and the Spanish Phœnician settlements, have been no longer under the Persian Peace; however they dealt with it with respect and the simplest individuals who gave any severe trouble have been the old discern hordes of Nordic humans in South Russia and Central Asia, the Scythians, who raided the northern and north-japanese borders.

Of course the population of this remarkable Persian empire became no longer a populace of Persians, The Persians had been handiest the small conquering minority of this full-size realm. The relaxation of the population changed into what it had been earlier than the Persians came from time immemorial, best that Persian became the executive language. Trade and finance were nevertheless in large part Semitic, Tyre and Sidon as of old had been the extraordinary

Mediterranean ports and Semitic delivery plied upon the seas. But a lot of these Semitic traders and enterprise humans as 135 they went from place to location already discovered a sympathetic and handy common records inside the Hebrew way of life and the Hebrew scriptures. A new detail which changed into growing rapidly on this empire became the Greek element. The Greeks were turning into extreme rivals to the Semites upon the ocean, and their indifferent and full of life intelligence made them useful and, unprejudiced officials.

FINE PIECE OF ATHENIAN POTTERY

FINE PIECE OF ATHENIAN POTTERY

Showing Greek service provider vessels with sails and oars
statue on left

Brit. Mus.

It turned into attributable to the Scythians that Darius I invaded Europe. He desired to reach South Russia, the hometown of the Scythian horsemen. He crossed the Bosphorus with a fantastic military and marched through Bulgaria to the Danube, crossed this through a bridge of boats and driven a ways northward. His navy suffered terribly. It changed into in large part an infantry force and the installed Scythians rode all spherical it, cut off its resources, destroyed any stragglers and in no way got here to a pitched struggle. Darius become compelled into an inglorious retreat.

He lower back himself to Susa but he left an military in Thrace and Macedonia, and Macedonia submitted to Darius.

Insurrections of the Greek towns in Asia followed this failure, and the European Greeks had been drawn into the contest.

Darius resolved upon the subjugation of the Greeks in Europe. With the Phoenician fleet at his disposal he was able to subdue one island after any other, and finally in 490 B.C. He made his essential assault upon Athens. A vast Armada sailed from the ports of Asia Minor and the eastern Mediterranean, and the

excursion landed its troops at Marathon to the north of Athens. There they were met and signally defeated by the Athenians.

136An outstanding element came about at the moment. The bitterest rival of Athens in Greece became Sparta, but now Athens appealed to Sparta, sending a usher in, a speedy runner, imploring the Spartans not to let Greeks emerge as slaves to barbarians. This runner (the prototype of all “Marathon” runners) did over one hundred miles of broken country in much less than days. The Spartans answered directly and generously; however while, in three days, the Spartan pressure reached Athens, there has been nothing for it to do but to view the battlefield and the our bodies of the defeated Persian infantrymen. The Persian fleet had again to Asia. So ended the primary Persian attack on Greece.

The subsequent become much greater dazzling. Darius died quickly after the information of his defeat at Marathon reached him, and for four years his son and successor, Xerxes, prepared a host to crush the Greeks. For a time terror united all the Greeks. The military of Xerxes was surely the best that had hitherto been assembled in the international. It became a massive meeting of discordant factors. It crossed the Dardanelles, 480 B.C., via a bridge of boats; and alongside the coast as it superior moved an equally miscellaneous fleet wearing resources. At the narrow bypass of Thermopylæ a small force of 1400 guys underneath the Spartan Leonidas resisted this multitude, and after a fight of unsurpassed heroism turned into absolutely destroyed. Every man became killed. But the losses they inflicted upon the Persians have been vast, and the navy of Xerxes driven directly to Thebes and Athens in a chastened mood. Thebes surrendered and made phrases. The Athenians abandoned their metropolis and it changed into burnt.

Greece regarded within the fingers of the conqueror, but once more got here victory against the percentages and all expectations. The Greek fleet, although not a third the dimensions of the Persian, assailed it in the bay of Salamis and destroyed it. Xerxes located himself and his giant navy reduce off from resources and his heart failed him. He retreated to Asia with one 1/2 of his army, leaving the relaxation to be defeated at Platea (479 B.C.) what time the remnants of the Persian fleet had been hunted down by using the Greeks and destroyed at Mycalæ in Asia Minor.

137

ALL THAT REMAINS OF THE GREAT TEMPLE OF
CORINTH

ALL THAT REMAINS OF THE GREAT TEMPLE OF
CORINTH

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

The Persian hazard was at an quit. Most of the Greek towns in Asia became free. All that is informed in incredible element and with plenty picturesqueness in the first of written histories, the History of 138Herodotus. This Herodotus was born approximately 484 B.C. Inside the Ionian metropolis of Halicarnassus in Asia Minor, and he visited Babylon and Egypt in his look for precise particulars. From Mycalæ onward Persia sank into a confusion of dynastic troubles. Xerxes turned into murdered in 465 B.C. And rebellions in Egypt, Syria and Media broke up the quick order of that potent realm. The history of Herodotus lays pressure on the weak spot of Persia. This records is indeed what we must now call propaganda—propaganda for Greece to unite and conquer Persia. Herodotus makes one individual, Aristagoras, go to the Spartans with a map of the known world and say to them: “These Barbarians are not valiant in fight. You alternatively have now attained the utmost ability in war No other countries in the world have what they own: gold, silver,

bronze, embroidered garments, beasts and slaves. All this you might have for yourselves, if you so favored.”

THE TEMPLE OF NEPTUNE (POSEIDON) AT CAPE SUNIUM

THE TEMPLE OF NEPTUNE (POSEIDON) AT CAPE SUNIUM

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

139

XXV

THE SPLENDOUR OF GREECE

THE century and a half of that observed the defeat of Persia became one in every of very excellent splendour for the Greek civilization. True that Greece become torn with the aid of a desperate war for ascendancy among Athens, Sparta and other states (the Peloponnesian War 431 to 404 B.C.) and that in 338 B.C. The Macedonians became really masters of Greece; though at some stage in this period the concept and the creative and creative impulse of the Greeks rose to ranges that made their success a lamp to mankind for all of the rest of history.

The head and centre of this mental hobby become Athens. For over thirty years (466 to 428 B.C.) Athens turned into ruled by a person of fantastic energy and liberality of thoughts, Pericles, who set himself to rebuild the city from the ashes to which the Persians had reduced it. The beautiful ruins that also glorify Athens to-day are mainly the stays of this fantastic attempt. And he did now not in reality rebuild a material Athens. He rebuilt Athens intellectually. He collected

approximately him not best architects and sculptors but poets, dramatists, philosophers and instructors. Herodotus got here to Athens to recite his records (438 B.C.). Anaxagoras got here with the beginnings of a scientific description of the solar and stars. Æschylus, Sophocles and Euripides one after the other carried the Greek drama to its highest tiers of beauty and the Aristocracy.

The impetus Pericles gave to the highbrow existence of Athens lived on after his death, and in spite of the reality that the peace of Greece became now damaged with the aid of the Peloponnesian War and a protracted and wasteful warfare for “ascendancy” turned into starting. Indeed the darkling of the political horizon appears for a time to have quickened in preference to discouraged guys’s minds.

Already long before the time of Pericles the peculiar freedom of Greek establishments had given awesome importance to ability in dialogue. A hundred and forty Decision rested neither with king nor with priest but in the assemblies of the humans or of main guys. Eloquence and able argument became very perfect accomplishments consequently, and a class of teachers arose, the Sophists, who undertook to strengthen young men in these arts. But one can not reason without count, and knowledge followed inside the wake of speech. The sports and rivalries of these Sophists led very evidently to an acute examination of favor, of techniques of notion and of the validity of arguments. When Pericles died a certain Socrates changed into turning into outstanding as an in a position and adverse critic of bad argument—and plenty of the coaching of the Sophists turned into terrible argument. A organization of super younger men accrued about Socrates. In the cease Socrates became carried out for disturbing people’s minds (399 B.C.), he become condemned after the dignified fashion of the Athens of those days to drink in his personal house and amongst his very own friends a poisonous draught made from hemlock, however the disturbance of humans’s minds went on

regardless of his condemnation. His younger guys carried on his teaching.

PART OF THE FAMOUS FRIEZE OF THE PARTHENON,
ATHENS

PART OF THE FAMOUS FRIEZE OF THE PARTHENON,
ATHENS

A specimen of Grecian sculpture in its greatest expression.
Compare the advance of artwork with that seen inside the
animals shown on p. 105

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

141

THE ACROPOLIS, ATHENS

THE ACROPOLIS, ATHENS

The marvellous institution of Temples and monuments
constructed beneath the inspiration of Pericles

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

THE THEATRE AT EPIDAUROS, GREECE

THE THEATRE AT EPIDAUROS, GREECE

A wonderfully preserved specimen displaying the full-size
auditorium

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

Chief among those young guys become Plato (427 to 347
B.C.) who presently commenced to train philosophy in the
grove of the Academy. His teaching fell into two principal
divisions, an examination of the foundations and techniques of
human questioning and an examination of political
establishments. He become the first guy to write down a
Utopia, that is to mention the plan of a community distinctive
from and better than any 142existing network. This indicates
an altogether unprecedented boldness in the human thoughts
which had hitherto commonplace social traditions and usages

with scarcely a question. Plato stated it appears that evidently to mankind: “Most of the social and political ills from that you go through are underneath your manipulate, given only the desire and braveness to change them. You can stay in any other and a smarter style if you pick to suppose it out and paintings it out. You aren’t conscious for your personal electricity.” That is a high adventurous teaching that has nevertheless to soak in to the not unusual intelligence of our race. One of his earliest works become the Republic, a dream of a communist aristocracy; his final unfinished work turned into the Laws, a scheme of regulation for every other such Utopian nation.

THE CARYATIDES OF THE ERECHTHEUM

THE CARYATIDES OF THE ERECHTHEUM

The ancient sanctuary at the Acropolis at Athens

Photo: Fred Boissonnas

143

ATHENE OF THE PARTHENON

ATHENE OF THE PARTHENON

Photo: Alinart

The criticism of techniques of thinking and methods of presidency become carried on after Plato’s death with the aid of Aristotle, who were his scholar and who taught in the Lyceum. Aristotle came from the town of Stagira in Macedonia, and his father was court docket medical doctor to the Macedonian king. For a time Aristotle changed into educate to Alexander, 144the king’s son, who become destined to achieve very great things of which we will quickly be telling. Aristotle’s work upon methods of wondering carried the technological know-how of Logic to a degree at which it remained for fifteen hundred years or extra, until the mediæval schoolmen took up the ancient questions again. He made no Utopias. Before guy should without a doubt manipulate his

destiny as Plato taught, Aristotle perceived that he wanted far greater know-how and a way greater accurate information than he possessed. And so Aristotle started out that methodical series of understanding which these days we name Science. He despatched out explorers to accumulate information. He turned into the father of natural history. He became the founding father of political science. His students at the Lyceum examined and compared the constitutions of 158 exceptional states

Here inside the fourth century B.C. We discover guys who are nearly “current thinkers.” The baby-like, dream-like techniques of primitive notion had given way to a disciplined and critical assault upon the problems of life. The bizarre and enormous symbolism and imagery of the gods and god monsters, and all the taboos and awes and restraints that have hitherto weighted down thinking are here completely set aside. Free, specific and systematic wondering has begun. The clean and unencumbered mind of those beginners out of the northern forests has thrust itself into the mysteries of the temple and permit the daylight in.

145

XXVI

THE EMPIRE OF ALEXANDER THE GREAT

FROM 431 to 404 B.C. The Peloponnesian War wasted Greece. Meanwhile to the north of Greece, the kindred u . S . Of Macedonia was growing slowly to electricity and civilization. The Macedonians spoke a language closely comparable to Greek, and on several occasions Macedonian competitors had taken part within the Olympic video games. In 359 B.C. A man of very high-quality competencies and ambition have become king of this little usa—Philip. Philip

had previously been a hostage in Greece; he had had a thoroughly Greek education and he became probable privy to the ideas of Herodotus—which had additionally been advanced through the philosopher Isocrates—of a probable conquest of Asia via a consolidated Greece.

He set himself first to increase and arrange his personal realm and to rework his navy. For one thousand years now the charging horse-chariot have been the decisive issue in battles, that and the near-fighting infantry. Mounted horsemen had additionally fought, but as a cloud of skirmishers, in my view and without subject. Philip made his infantry combat in a closely packed mass, the Macedonian phalanx, and he educated his installed gents, the knights or companions, to fight in formation and so invented cavalry. The master move in maximum of his battles and in the battles of his son Alexander changed into a cavalry rate. The phalanx held the enemy infantry in front whilst the cavalry swept away the enemy horse on his wings and poured in at the flank and rear of his infantry. Chariots have been disabled by way of bowmen, who shot the horses.

With this new military Philip prolonged his frontiers via Thessaly to Greece; and the struggle of Chæronia (338 B.C.), fought against Athens and her allies, put all Greece at his feet. At final the dream of Herodotus became bearing fruit. A congress of all the Greek states appointed Philip captain-general of the Græco- Macedonian confederacy 146in opposition to Persia, and in 336 B.C. His advanced shield crossed into Asia upon this lengthy premeditated adventure. But he never observed it. He became assassinated; it's miles believed at the instigation of his queen Olympias, Alexander's mom. She changed into jealous because Philip had married a 2d wife.

BUST OF ALEXANDER THE GREAT

BUST OF ALEXANDER THE GREAT

(As within the British Museum)

But Philip had taken unusual pains along with his son's schooling. He had not simply secured Aristotle, the finest logician inside the world, as this boy's tutor, but he had shared his ideas with him and thrust navy upon him. At Chæronia Alexander, who become then most effective eighteen years antique, have been in charge of the cavalry. And so it changed into feasible for this young guy, who become nonetheless only twenty years old on the time of his accession, to take up his father's task straight away and to proceed efficaciously with the Persian adventure.

In 334 B.C.—for 2 years had been needed to set up and affirm his function in Macedonia and Greece—he crossed into Asia, defeated a no longer very plenty larger Persian army on the conflict of the Granicus and captured a number of towns in Asia Minor. He kept along the ocean-coast. It was vital for him to lessen and garrison all the coast cities as he advanced due to the fact the Persians had manipulate of the fleets of Tyre and Sidon and so had command of the sea. 147Had he left a opposed port in his rear the Persians would possibly have landed forces to raid his communications and reduce him off. At Issus (333 B.C.) he met and smashed a full-size conglomerate host under Darius III. Like the host of Xerxes that had crossed the Dardanelles a century and a half earlier than, it become an incoherent accumulation of contingents and it become encumbered with a large number of court officials, the harem of Darius and many camp fans. Sidon surrendered to Alexander however Tyre resisted obstinately. Finally that awesome town become stormed and plundered and destroyed. Gaza additionally turned into stormed, and closer to the give up of 332 B.C. The conqueror entered Egypt and took over its rule from the Persians.

ALEXANDER'S VICTORY OVER THE PERSIANS AT ISSUS

ALEXANDER'S VICTORY OVER THE PERSIANS AT ISSUS

(From the Pompeian Mosaic)

Alexander expenses in on the left, Darius is inside the chariot to the right

At Alexandretta and at Alexandria in Egypt he constructed splendid cities, available from the land and so incapable of revolt. To these the change of the Phœnician cities was diverted. The Phœnicians of the western Mediterranean unexpectedly disappear from records—and as straight away the Jews of Alexandria and the opposite new trading cities created by way of Alexander seem.

In 331 B.C. Alexander marched out of Egypt upon Babylon as Thothmes and Rameses and Necho had completed earlier than him. But he marched by way of Tyre. At Arbela near the ruins of Nineveh, 148 which became already a forgotten town, he met Darius and fought the decisive warfare of the conflict. The Persian chariot charge failed, a Macedonian cavalry charge broke up the extraordinary composite host and the phalanx completed the victory. Darius led the retreat. He made no in addition try to face up to the invader but fled northward into the country of the Medes. Alexander marched on to Babylon, nonetheless wealthy and critical, after which to Susa and Persepolis. There after a drunken festival he burnt down the palace of Darius, the king of kings.

THE APOLLO BELVEDERE

THE APOLLO BELVEDERE

(In the Vatican Museum)

Thence Alexander currently made a army parade of central Asia, going to the maximum bounds of the Persian empire. At

first he became northward. Darius turned into pursued; and he changed into overtaken at sunrise demise in his chariot, having been murdered with the aid of his very own people. He become nevertheless residing while the most Greeks reached him. Alexander came as much as find him dead. Alexander skirted the Caspian Sea, he went up into the mountains of western Turkestan, he came down via Herat (which he founded) and Cabul and the Khyber Pass into 149India. He fought a outstanding warfare on the Indus with an Indian king, Porus, and right here the Macedonian troops met elephants for the primary time and defeated them. Finally he constructed himself ships, sailed down to the mouth of the Indus, and marched returned by means of the coast of Beluchistan, accomplishing Susa once more in 324 B.C. After a scarcity of six years. He then organized to consolidate and organize this significant empire he had gained. He sought to win over his new topics. He assumed the gowns and tiara of a Persian monarch, and this roused the jealousy of his Macedonian commanders. He had a good deal problem with them. He organized some of marriages between these Macedonian officers and Persian and Babylonian girls: the “Marriage of the East and West.” He never lived to impact the consolidation he had deliberate. A fever seized him after a drinking bout in Babylon and he died in 323 B.C.

Immediately this widespread dominion fell to portions. One of his generals, Seleucus, retained maximum of the vintage Persian empire from the Indus to Ephesus; every other, Ptolemy, seized Egypt, and Antigonus secured Macedonia. The rest of the empire remained unstable, passing beneath the manipulate of a succession of local adventurers. Barbarian raids commenced from the north and grew in scope and depth. Until at ultimate, as we will tell, a new strength, the strength of the Roman republic, came out of the west to subjugate one fragment after another and weld them collectively into a new and greater enduring empire.

XXVII

THE MUSEUM AND LIBRARY AT ALEXANDRIA

BEFORE the time of Alexander Greeks had already been spreading as merchants, artists, officers, mercenary squaddies, over maximum of the Persian dominions. In the dynastic disputes that observed the death of Xerxes, a band of ten thousand Greek mercenaries played a component under the leadership of Xenophon. Their go back to Asiatic Greece from Babylon is described in his Retreat of the Ten Thousand, one of the first struggle testimonies that was ever written with the aid of a general in command. But the conquests of Alexander and the department of his short empire among his subordinate generals, significantly stimulated this permeation of the historic world by using the Greeks and their language and models and tradition. Traces of this Greek dissemination are to be found far away in significant Asia and in north-west India. Their have an effect on upon the development of Indian art turned into profound.

For many centuries Athens retained her prestige as a centre of art and way of life; her faculties went on certainly to 529 A.D., that is to say for almost one thousand years; however the management in the intellectual activity of the arena surpassed presently across the Mediterranean to Alexandria, the new buying and selling metropolis that Alexander had founded. Here the Macedonian widespread Ptolemy had end up Pharaoh, with a courtroom that spoke Greek. He had end up an intimate of Alexander earlier than he have become king, and he become deeply saturated with the thoughts of Aristotle. He set himself, with great electricity and capability, to prepare understanding and investigation. He additionally wrote a

history of Alexander's campaigns which, unhappily, is misplaced to the sector.

Alexander had already dedicated extensive sums to finance the enquiries of Aristotle, but Ptolemy I became the primary person to make a permanent endowment of technological know-how. He set up a foundation in Alexandria which turned into formerly committed to the Muses, the Museum of Alexandria. For or three generations the clinical paintings finished at Alexandria was exceedingly desirable. Euclid, Eratosthenes who measured the scale of the earth and came within fifty miles of its true diameter, Apollonius who wrote on conic sections, Hipparchus who made the first famous person map and catalogue, and Hero who devised the first steam engine are many of the extra stars of an excellent constellation of clinical pioneers. Archimedes got here from Syracuse to Alexandria to observe, and changed into a frequent correspondent of the Museum. Herophilus was one of the best of Greek anatomists, and is said to have practised vivisection.

For a generation or so during the reigns of Ptolemy I and Ptolemy II there was this kind of blaze of knowledge and discovery at Alexandria as the arena turned into no longer to see again until the sixteenth century A.D. But it did not maintain. There can also be numerous reasons of this decline. Chief among them, the overdue Professor Mahaffy recommended, became the reality that the Museum changed into a "royal" university and all its professors and fellows have been appointed and paid by way of Pharaoh. This became all very well whilst Pharaoh was Ptolemy I, the pupil and pal of Aristotle. But because the dynasty of the Ptolemies went on they became Egyptianized, they fell under the sway of Egyptian monks and Egyptian spiritual developments, they ceased to follow the paintings that changed into performed, and their control stifled the spirit of enquiry altogether. The

Museum produced little suitable paintings after its first century of activity.

Ptolemy I now not simplest sought within the most contemporary spirit to arrange the locating of fresh expertise. He tried additionally to installation an encyclopædic storehouse of awareness in the Library of Alexandria. It turned into not truely a storehouse, it turned into additionally a e-book-copying and e-book-promoting organization. A remarkable navy of copyists changed into got to work continuously multiplying copies of books.

Here then we have the precise first beginning up of the highbrow system in which we live to-day; right here we have the systematic amassing and distribution of understanding. The foundation of this Museum and Library marks one of the terrific epochs within the history of mankind. It is the real starting of Modern History.

ARISTOTLE

ARISTOTLE

From Herculaneum, possibly Fourth Century B.C.

Photo: Dr. Singer

Both the paintings of research and the work of dissemination went on beneath serious handicaps. One of those changed into the first rate social hole that 152 separated the truth seeker, who became a gentleman, from the dealer and the artisan. There had been glass people and steel employees in abundance in the ones days, but they have been now not in intellectual contact with the thinkers. The glass worker became making the most fantastically colored beads and phials and so forth, however he never made a Florentine flask or a lens. Clear glass does no longer seem to have interested him. The steel employee made guns and jewelry but he never made a

chemical stability. The truth seeker speculated loftily approximately atoms and the character of factors, however he had no sensible enjoy of enamels and pigments and philters and so forth. He became not interested by materials. So Alexandria in its short day of possibility produced no microscopes and no chemistry. And although Hero invented a steam engine it became in no way set either to pump or drive a boat or do any beneficial aspect. There had been few sensible applications of technology except in the realm of medicine, and the progress of science was now not stimulated and sustained by the hobby and excitement of realistic packages. There was not anything to hold the work going therefore while the intellectual interest of Ptolemy I and Ptolemy 153II was withdrawn. The discoveries of the Museum went on file in difficult to understand manuscripts and by no means, until the revival of medical interest on the Renaissance, reached out to the mass of mankind.

Nor did the Library produce any upgrades in e-book making. That historic global had no paper made in definite sizes from rag pulp. Paper changed into a Chinese invention and it did not attain the western global till the 9th century A.D. The best e book materials were parchment and strips of the papyrus reed joined edge to edge. These strips were kept on rolls which had been very unwieldy to wind to and fro and examine, and really inconvenient for reference. It became these items that prevented the development of paged and published books. Printing itself become recognised in the world it'd appear as early because the Old Stone Age; there have been seals in ancient Sumeria; however with out considerable paper there was little gain in printing books, an improvement that can in addition were resisted via trades unionism at the part of the copyists employed. Alexandria produced considerable books however now not reasonably-priced books, and it in no way unfold understanding into the populace of the historical global below the extent of a rich and influential elegance.

STATUETTE OF MAITREYA: THE BUDDHA TO COME

STATUETTE OF MAITREYA: THE BUDDHA TO COME

A Græco-Buddhist sculpture of the Third Century A.D.

(From Malakand, N. W. Province, now within the India Museum)

So it changed into that this blaze of highbrow corporation by no means reached past a small circle of people in touch with the institution of philosophers amassed by the first two Ptolemies. It turned into just like the mild in a darkish lantern that is close off from the sector at huge. Within the blaze can be blindingly vivid, however however it's far unseen. The relaxation of the arena went on its vintage approaches unaware that the seed of medical understanding that changed into sooner or later to revolutionize it altogether had been sown. Presently a darkness of bigotry fell even upon 154 Alexandria. Thereafter for 1000 years of darkness the seed that Aristotle had sown lay hidden. Then it stirred and started to germinate. In a few centuries it had come to be that big increase of know-how and clear thoughts that is now converting the complete of human existence.

THE DEATH OF BUDDHA

THE DEATH OF BUDDHA

Græco-Buddhist carving from Sivat Valley, N. W. Province, likely A.D. 350

India Mus.

Alexandria turned into now not the only centre of Greek highbrow activity in the third century B.C. There were many different cities that displayed a fantastic highbrow life amidst the disintegrating fragments of the quick empire of Alexander. There was, for example, the Greek town of Syracuse in Sicily, where notion and technological know-how flourished for 2 centuries; there has been Pergamum in Asia Minor, which additionally had a brilliant library. But this notable Hellenic

international became now tormented by invasion from the north. New Nordic barbarians, the Gauls, were placing down alongside the tracks that had once been followed through the ancestors of the Greeks and Phrygians and Macedonians. They raided, shattered and destroyed. And inside the wake of the Gauls came a new conquering human beings out of Italy, the Romans, who progressively subjugated all of the western 1/2 of the tremendous realm of Darius and Alexander. They were an able but unimaginative human beings, who prefer regulation and profit to both technology or artwork. 155New invaders were additionally coming down out of crucial Asia to shatter and subdue the Seleucid empire and to reduce off the western world again from India. These were the Parthians, hosts of set up bowmen, who treated the Græco-Persian empire of Persepolis and Susa within the 1/3 century B.C. In a lot the same style that the Medes and Persians had dealt with it in the 7th and 6th. And there have been now different nomadic peoples also coming out of the northeast, peoples who had been now not fair and Nordic and Aryan- speaking but yellow-skinned and black-haired and with a Mongolian speech. But of those latter people we will tell extra in a subsequent bankruptcy.

156

XXVIII

THE LIFE OF GAUTAMA BUDDHA

BUT now we have to move back three centuries in our story to tell of a superb trainer who came near to revolutionizing the spiritual idea and feeling of all Asia. This changed into Gautama Buddha, who taught his disciples at Benares in India approximately the same time that Isaiah changed into prophesying some of the Jews in Babylon and Heraclitus become sporting on his speculative enquiries into the character

of factors at Ephesus. All those men have been in the world on the same time, in the 6th century B.C.—unaware of one another.

This sixth century B.C. Changed into certainly one of the maximum tremendous in all records. Everywhere—for as we will tell it was also the case in China—guys's minds had been showing a new boldness. Everywhere they were waking up out of the traditions of kingships and monks and blood sacrifices and asking the most penetrating questions. It is as if the race had reached a degree of adolescence—after a adolescence of twenty thousand years.

The early history of India continues to be very difficult to understand. Somewhen possibly approximately 2000 B.C., an Aryan- speakme people got here down from the north-west into India both in one invasion or in a series of invasions; and became capable of spread its language and traditions over maximum of north India. Its extraordinary sort of Aryan speech became the Sanskrit. They found a brunette humans with a greater difficult civilization and less vigor of will, in possession of the united states of america of the Indus and Ganges. But they do no longer seem to have mingled with their predecessors as freely as did the Greeks and Persians. They remained aloof. When the past of India turns into dimly visible to the historian, Indian society is already stratified into several layers, with a variable range of sub-divisions, which do not consume together nor intermarry nor companion freely. And in the course of records this 157stratification into castes keeps. This makes the Indian population some thing exclusive from the simple, freely inter-breeding European or Mongolian communities. It is sincerely a community of communities.

Siddhattha Gautama was the son of an aristocratic own family which dominated a small district on the Himalayan slopes. He changed into married at nineteen to a stunning cousin. He

hunted and played and went about in his sunny global of gardens and groves and irrigated rice-fields. And it became amidst this lifestyles that a terrific discontent fell upon him. It was the disappointment of a first-rate mind that seeks employment. He felt that the lifestyles he was leading changed into not the reality of life, but a vacation—a holiday that had long gone on too lengthy.

The feel of disorder and mortality, the lack of confidence and the un-satisfactoriness of all happiness, descended upon the mind of Gautama. While he turned into in this mood he met one of those wandering ascetics who already existed in excellent numbers in India. These guys lived below excessive rules, spending an awful lot time in meditation and in spiritual dialogue. They have been imagined to be searching for a few deeper fact in life, and a passionate desire to do likewise took possession of Gautama.

He turned into meditating upon this assignment, says the story, whilst the news become delivered to him that his spouse have been introduced of his first-born son. “This is some other tie to break,” said Gautama.

He lower back to the village amidst the rejoicings of his fellow clansmen. There become a tremendous feast and a Nautch dance to rejoice the delivery of this new tie, and within the night time Gautama awoke in a top notch anguish of spirit, “like a man who’s advised that his house is on fire.” He resolved to depart his glad aimless life forthwith. He went softly to the edge of his wife’s chamber, and saw her through the light of a little oil lamp, drowsing sweetly, surrounded with the aid of vegetation, with his little one son in her fingers. He felt a exquisite yearning to take up the kid in one first and last embody earlier than he departed, however the fear of waking his wife avoided him, and at closing he became away and went

out into the intense Indian moonshine and set up his horse and rode off into the arena.

158

TIBETAN BUDDHA

TIBETAN BUDDHA

Gilt Brass Casting in India Museum, displaying Gautama Buddha inside the “earth witness” attitude

India Mus.

Very far he rode that night time, and inside the morning he stopped outdoor 159the lands of his clan, and dismounted beside a sandy river. There he cut off his flowing locks along with his sword, removed all his embellishes and despatched them and his horse and sword back to his house. Going on he presently met a ragged man and exchanged garments with him, and so having divested himself of all worldly entanglements he was unfastened to pursue his seek after expertise. He made his way southward to a lodge of hermits and instructors in a hilly spur of the Vindhya Mountains. There lived some of smart men in a warren of caves, going into the town for his or her simple elements and imparting their know-how by phrase of mouth to consisting of cared to come back to them. Gautama have become versed in all the metaphysics of his age. But his acute intelligence became disillusioned with the answers offered him.

A BURMESE BUDDHA

A BURMESE BUDDHA

Marble Figure from Mandalay, eighteenth century paintings, now inside the India Museum

The Indian thoughts has usually been disposed to agree with that energy and knowledge can be received by excessive asceticism, by means of fasting, sleeplessness, and self-

torment, and these thoughts Gautama now put to the check. He betook himself with five disciple partners to the jungle and there he gave himself as much as fasting and horrible penances. His fame spread, “like the sound of a outstanding one hundred sixtybell hung in the cover of the skies.” But it delivered him no experience of fact finished. One day he was walking up and down, looking to assume notwithstanding his enfeebled kingdom. Suddenly he fell unconscious. When he recovered, the preposterousness of those semi-magical methods to expertise changed into plain to him.

THE DHAMÊKH TOWER

THE DHAMÊKH TOWER

In the Deer Park at Sarnath. Sixth Century A.D.

(From a Painting in the India Museum)

He horrified his companions by way of stressful regular meals and refusing to maintain his mortifications. He had realized that anything reality a person can also attain is reached first-class by using a nourished mind in a wholesome frame. Such a concept changed into genuinely overseas to the thoughts of the land and age. His disciples deserted him, and went off in a despair country to Benares. Gautama wandered by myself.

When the thoughts grapples with a first-rate and difficult trouble, it makes its advances little by little, with however little awareness of the profits it has made, until unexpectedly, with an effect of abrupt illumination, it realizes its victory. So it occurred to Gautama. He had seated himself below a first rate tree through the facet of a river to consume, whilst this sense of clean vision got here to him. It seemed to him that he noticed existence undeniable. He is said to have sat all day and all night time in profound concept, after which he rose up to impart his imaginative and prescient to the sector.

He went directly to Benares and there he sought out and gained returned his misplaced disciples to his new teaching. In the King's Deer Park at Benares they built themselves huts and set up a form of college to which got here many that had been searching for after information.

The start line of his coaching changed into his very own question as a lucky 161 younger man, "Why am I no longer absolutely satisfied?" It become an introspective query. It was a question very one of a kind in best from the frank and self-forgetful externalized curiosity with which Thales and Heraclitus have been attacking the problems of the universe, or the equally self-forgetful burthen of ethical responsibility that the culminating prophets were implementing upon the Hebrew mind. The Indian trainer did no longer forget about self, he focused upon self and sought to smash it. All suffering, he taught, was because of the greedy desires of the character. Until guy has conquered his non-public cravings his existence is trouble and his cease sorrow. There were 3 fundamental forms that the craving for life took and that they were all evil. The first become the choice of the appetites, greed and all varieties of sensuousness, the second one became the desire for a private and egotistic immortality, the 1/3 become the longing for non-public fulfillment, worldliness, avarice and so forth. All those varieties of choice had to be conquer to break out from the distresses and chagrins of lifestyles. When they were overcome, when self had vanished altogether, then serenity of soul, Nirvana, the highest proper was attained.

This turned into the gist of his teaching, a completely diffused and metaphysical coaching indeed, no longer nearly so easy to apprehend because the Greek injunction to look and recognise fearlessly and rightly and the Hebrew command to fear God and accomplish righteousness. It was a coaching tons beyond the knowledge of even Gautama's immediate disciples, and it is no surprise that so quickly as his non-public affect become

withdrawn it became corrupted and coarsened. There became a full-size belief in India at that time that at lengthy periods Wisdom got here to earth and became incarnate in a few selected man or woman who was called the Buddha. Gautama's disciples declared that he turned into a Buddha, the modern day of the Buddhas, although there's no proof that he himself ever frequent the identify. Before he changed into properly lifeless, a cycle of wonderful legends began to be woven approximately him. The human heart has continually favored a wonder story to a moral effort, and Gautama Buddha have become very incredible.

Yet there remained a extensive gain inside the world. If Nirvana became too high and diffused for maximum guys's imaginations, if the parable-making impulse inside the race was too robust for the easy records of Gautama's lifestyles, they could at the least hold close some thing of the purpose 162of what Gautama referred to as the Eight-fold way, the Aryan or Noble Path in lifestyles. In this there has been an insistence upon mental uprightness, upon proper ambitions and speech, proper behavior and sincere livelihood. There changed into a quickening of the judgment of right and wrong and an attraction to generous and self-forgetful ends.

163

XXIX

KING ASOKA

FOR some generations after the demise of Gautama, these high and noble Buddhist teachings, this primary plain teaching that the best true for man is the subjugation of self, made relatively little headway inside the global. Then they conquered the imagination of one of the greatest monarchs the world has ever visible.

We have already mentioned how Alexander the Great got here down into India and fought with Porus upon the Indus. It is related by means of the Greek historians that a sure Chandragupta Maurya got here into Alexander's camp and tried to influence him to go directly to the Ganges and overcome all India. Alexander couldn't do that because of the refusal of his Macedonians to move further into what was for them an unknown world, and later on (303 B.C.)

Chandragupta was capable of at ease the help or various hill tribes and understand his dream without Greek help. He built up an empire in North India and become currently (303 B.C.) able to assault Seleucus I in the Punjab and force the final vestige of Greek strength out of India. His son prolonged this new empire. His grandson, Asoka, the monarch of whom we've to inform, discovered himself in 264 B.C. Ruling from Afghanistan to Madras.

Asoka become at the beginning disposed to follow the example of his father and grandfather and entire the conquest of the Indian peninsula. He invaded Kalinga (255 B.C.), a rustic on the east coast of Madras, he turned into a success in his military operations and—on my own amongst conquerors—he changed into so disgusted by the cruelty and horror of battle that he renounced it. He might haven't any more of it. He adopted the non violent doctrines of Buddhism and declared that henceforth his conquests must be the conquests of faith.

A LOHAN OR BUDDHIST APOSTLE (Tang Dynasty)

A LOHAN OR BUDDHIST APOSTLE (Tang Dynasty)

(From the statue in the British Museum)

His reign for 8-and-twenty years turned into one of the brightest interludes within the records of mankind. He organized a 164top notch digging of wells in India and the

planting of trees for coloration. He based hospitals and public gardens and gardens for the growing of medicinal herbs. He created a ministry for the care of the aborigines and challenge races of India. He made provision for the training of women. He made good sized benefactions to the Buddhist teaching orders, and tried to stimulate them to a better and extra active grievance in their very own gathered literature. For corruptions and superstitious accretions had accrued very one hundred sixty five quickly upon the natural and simple coaching of the remarkable Indian grasp. Missionaries went from Asoka to Kashmir, to Persia, to Ceylon and Alexandria.

TRANSOME SHOWING THE COURT OF ASOKA

TRANSOME SHOWING THE COURT OF ASOKA

India Mus.

ASOKA PANEL FROM BHARHUT

ASOKA PANEL FROM BHARHUT

India Mus.

Such become Asoka, greatest of kings. He turned into some distance earlier of his age. He left no prince and no company of fellows to hold on his paintings, and inside a century of his dying the extremely good days of his reign had turn out to be a wonderful reminiscence in a shattered and decaying India. The priestly caste of the Brahmins, the highest and maximum privileged caste inside the Indian social body, has constantly been opposed to the frank and open teaching of Buddha. Gradually they undermined the Buddhist have an impact on inside the land. The vintage vast gods, the innumerable cults of Hinduism, resumed their sway. Caste have become 166extra rigorous and complex. For lengthy centuries Buddhism and Brahminism flourished aspect by means of facet, after which slowly Buddhism decayed and Brahminism in a multitude of bureaucracy replaced it. But past the confines of India and the realms of caste Buddhism spread—until it had gained China

and Siam and Burma and Japan, international locations in which it's far essential to nowadays.

THE PILLAR OF LIONS

THE PILLAR OF LIONS

Capital of the Pillar (column lying on side) erected in Deer Park in the time of Asoka, in which Buddha preached his first sermon

(From a print in the India Museum)

167

XXX

CONFUCIUS AND LAO TSE

WE have nonetheless to tell of two different exquisite men, Confucius and Lao Tse, who lived in that remarkable century which started the early life of mankind, the 6th century B.C. In this history to date we have advised little or no of the early story of China. At gift that early history is still very obscure, and we appearance to Chinese explorers and archæologists in the new China that is now bobbing up to exercise session their past as very well because the European past has been worked out over the past century. Very lengthy in the past the first primitive Chinese civilizations arose inside the brilliant river valleys out of the primordial heliolithic way of life. They had, like Egypt and Sumeria, the overall characteristics of that lifestyle, and that they concentrated upon temples in which priests and priest kings offered the seasonal blood sacrifices. The life in the ones towns have to have been very just like the Egyptian and Sumerian lifestyles of six or seven thousand years ago and very just like the Maya lifestyles of Central America 1000 years ago.

If there had been human sacrifices that they had lengthy given manner to animal sacrifices before the dawn of records. And a shape of picture writing became developing up long earlier than 1000 years B.C.

And just because the primitive civilizations of Europe and western Asia have been in battle with the nomads of the wasteland and the nomads of the north, so the primitive Chinese civilizations had a brilliant cloud of nomadic peoples on their northern borders. There changed into a number of tribes akin in language and approaches of dwelling, who're spoken of in history in succession as the Huns, the Mongols, the Turks and Tartars. They modified and divided and combined and re-mixed, just as the Nordic peoples in north Europe and central Asia modified and sundry in name rather than in nature. These Mongolian nomads had horses earlier than the Nordic peoples, and it is able to 168be that inside the location of the Altai Mountains they made an independent discovery of iron somewhen after a thousand B.C. And simply as in the western case so ever and again these Japanese nomads could obtain a form of political team spirit, and turn out to be the conquerors and masters and revivers of this or that settled and civilized vicinity.

It is pretty viable that the earliest civilization of China changed into no longer Mongolian at all any more than the earliest civilization of Europe and western Asia become Nordic or Semitic. It is pretty viable that the earliest civilization of China became a brunette civilization and of a piece with the earliest Egyptian, Sumerian and Dravidian civilizations, and that after the first recorded records of China started there had already been conquests and intermixture. At any charge we find that via 1750 B.C. China changed into already a significant system of little kingdoms and metropolis states, all acknowledging a unfastened allegiance and paying more or less frequently,

greater or much less definite feudal dues to at least one amazing priest emperor, the "Son of Heaven." The "Shang" dynasty got here to an result in 1125 B.C. A "Chow" dynasty succeeded "Shang," and maintained China in a relaxing solidarity until the days of Asoka in India and of the Ptolemies in Egypt. Gradually China went to pieces all through that lengthy "Chow" duration. Hunnish peoples came down and installation principalities; local rulers discontinued their tribute and became independent. There changed into in the 6th century B.C., says one Chinese authority, 5 or six thousand almost unbiased states in China. It was what the Chinese name in their information an "Age of Confusion."

But this Age of Confusion become well suited with a lot highbrow activity and with the life of many local centres of artwork and civilized dwelling. When we know greater of Chinese records we shall discover that China additionally had her Miletus and her Athens, her Pergamum and her Macedonia. At present we should be indistinct and short approximately this era of Chinese department simply due to the fact our know-how isn't enough for us to frame a coherent and consecutive story.

169

CONFUCIUS

CONFUCIUS

Copy of stone carving in the Temple of Confucius at K'iu Fu

(From the information of the Archæological Mission to North China (Chavannes))

And simply as in divided Greece there have been philosophers and in shattered and captive Jewry prophets, so in disordered China there had been philosophers and instructors presently. In most of these instances 170insecurity and uncertainty regarded to have quickened the higher form of thoughts. Confucius was a person of aristocratic beginning and some respectable

significance in a small kingdom known as Lu. Here in a totally parallel mood to the Greek impulse he installation a sort of Academy for coming across and coaching Wisdom. The lawlessness and ailment of China distressed him profoundly. He conceived an ideal of a better authorities and a higher existence, and travelled from nation to country seeking a prince who could carry out his legislative and educational thoughts. He by no means observed his prince; he found a prince, however courtroom intrigues undermined the impact of the instructor and finally defeated his reforming proposals. It is interesting to observe that a century and a 1/2 later the Greek logician Plato also sought a prince, and was for a time adviser to the tyrant Dionysius who ruled Syracuse in Sicily.

Confucius died a upset man. “No smart ruler arises to take me as his master,” he said, “and my time has come to die.” But his coaching had greater energy than he imagined in his declining and hopeless years, and it have become a awesome formative impact with the Chinese human beings. It have become one among what the Chinese name the Three Teachings, the alternative being the ones of Buddha and of Lao Tse.

The gist of the coaching of Confucius was the way of the noble or aristocratic guy. He changed into worried with non-public conduct as an awful lot as Gautama turned into involved with the peace of self-forgetfulness and the Greek with external expertise and the Jew with righteousness. He turned into the maximum public-minded of all incredible instructors. He was supremely concerned by using the confusion and miseries of the sector, and he desired to make men noble so as to bring about a noble international. He sought to regulate behavior to an excellent volume; to offer sound policies for every event in life. A well mannered, public- spirited gentleman, rather sternly self-disciplined, become an appropriate he discovered already developing within the northern Chinese world and one to which he gave a permanent shape.

THE GREAT WALL OF CHINA

THE GREAT WALL OF CHINA

As it crosses the mountains in Manchuria

Photo: Underwood & Underwood

The teaching of Lao Tse, who turned into for a long term in price of the imperial library of the Chow dynasty, become an awful lot greater mystical and vague and elusive than that of Confucius. He seems to have preached a stoical indifference to the pleasures and powers of the 172world and a return to an imaginary easy lifestyles of the beyond. He left writings very gotten smaller in fashion and really difficult to understand. He wrote in riddles. After his dying his teachings, like the teachings of Gautama Buddha, had been corrupted and overlaid by means of legends and had the maximum complex and top notch observances and superstitious thoughts grafted upon them. In China just as in India primordial ideas of magic and immense legends out of the infantile beyond of our race struggled against the new thinking in the international and succeeded in plastering it over with ugly, irrational and antiquated observances. Both Buddhism and Taoism (which ascribes itself largely to Lao Tse) as one unearths them in China now, are religions of monk, temple, priest and presenting of a type as historical in form, if now not in idea, because the sacrificial religions of historical Sumeria and Egypt. But the teaching 173of Confucius become no longer so overlaid as it was confined and plain and simple and lent itself to no such distortions.

EARLY CHINESE BRONZE BELL

EARLY CHINESE BRONZE BELL

Inscribed in archaic characters: "made to be used by means of the elder of Hing village in Ting district;" latter 1/2 of the

Chou Dynasty, Sixth Century B.C.

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

North China, the China of the Hwang-ho River, became Confucian in idea and spirit; south China, Yang-tse-Kiang China, have become Taoist. Since the ones days a warfare has always been traceable in Chinese affairs among those spirits, the spirit of the north and the spirit of the south, between (in latter instances) Peking and Nanking, among the legit-minded, upright and conservative north, and the sceptical, inventive, lax and experimental south.

The divisions of China of the Age of Confusion reached their worst degree in the sixth century B.C. The Chow dynasty was so enfeebled and so discredited that Lao Tse left the sad courtroom and retired into non-public life.

Three nominally subordinate powers dominated the scenario in the ones days, Ts'i and Ts'in, each northern powers, and Ch'u, which became an aggressive navy power within the Yangtse valley. At final Ts'i and Ts'in shaped an alliance, subdued Ch'u and imposed a fashionable treaty of disarmament and peace in China. The energy of Ts'in have become principal. Finally about the time of Asoka in India the Ts'in monarch seized upon the sacrificial vessels of the Chow emperor and took over his sacrificial duties. His son, Shi-Hwang-ti (king in 246 B.C., emperor in 220 B.C.), is known as inside the Chinese Chronicles "the First Universal Emperor."

More fortunate than Alexander, Shi-Hwang-ti reigned for thirty-six years as king and emperor. His lively reign marks the start of a brand new technology of solidarity and prosperity for the Chinese humans. He fought vigorously towards the Hunnish invaders from the northern deserts, and he began that vast work, the Great Wall of China, to set a limit to their incursions.

XXXI

ROME COMES INTO HISTORY

THE reader will note a widespread similarity within the history of a majority of these civilizations in spite of the efficient separation caused by the high-quality limitations of the Indian north-west frontier and of the mountain masses of Central Asia and in addition India. First for hundreds of years the heliolithic lifestyle spread over all the warm and fertile river valleys of the old global and evolved a temple device and priest rulers approximately its sacrificial traditions. Apparently its first makers had been continually the ones brunette peoples we've got spoken of as the critical race of mankind. Then the nomads got here in from the areas of seasonal grass and seasonal migrations and superposed their very own traits and regularly their personal language at the primitive civilization. They subjugated and inspired it, and have been inspired to sparkling trends and made it here one factor and right here another. In Mesopotamia it become the Elamite after which the Semite, and at final the Nordic Medes and Persians and the Greeks who provided the ferment; over the place of the Ægean peoples it changed into the Greeks; in India it become the Aryan-audio system; in Egypt there has been a thinner infusion of conquerors into a more intensely saturated priestly civilization; in China, the Hun conquered and changed into absorbed and changed into followed by clean Huns. China become Mongolized just as Greece and North India have been Aryanized and Mesopotamia Semitized and Aryanized. Everywhere the nomads destroyed a whole lot, however everywhere they added in a new spirit of loose enquiry and moral innovation. They wondered the ideals of immemorial a long time. They let daylight into the temples. They set up

kings who had been neither clergymen nor gods however mere leaders amongst their captains and companions.

175

THE DYING GAUL

THE DYING GAUL

The statue inside the National Museum, Rome, depicting a Gaul stabbing himself, after killing his spouse, inside the presence of his enemies

Photo: Anderson

In the centuries following the sixth century B.C. We find anywhere a brilliant breaking down of historical traditions and a brand new spirit of ethical and intellectual enquiry wakeful, a spirit never greater to be altogether stilled in the remarkable innovative movement of mankind. We discover studying and writing turning into common and available accomplishments the various ruling and prosperous minority; they were not the jealously guarded mystery of the clergymen. Travel is increasing and shipping developing easier by cause of horses and roads. A new and easy tool to facilitate alternate has been found in coined cash.

Let us now switch our interest returned from China in the intense east of the vintage international to the western 1/2 of the Mediterranean. Here we need to notice the advent of a city which turned into destined to play at remaining a completely remarkable component certainly in human affairs, Rome.

Hitherto we've advised very little approximately Italy in our tale. It was earlier than 1000 B.C. A land of mountain and forest and thinly populated. Aryan-speaking tribes had pressed down this peninsula and fashioned little cities and towns, and the southern extremity turned into studded with Greek settlements. The noble ruins of Paestum preserve for us to at

the moment some thing of the distinction and splendour of those early Greek institutions. A non-Aryan humans, possibly similar to the Ægean peoples, the Etruscans, had set up themselves inside the relevant part of the peninsula. They had reversed the same old manner with the aid of subjugating various Aryan tribes. Rome, while it comes into the light of history, is a bit buying and selling metropolis at a ford on the Tiber, with a Latin-talking population dominated over by using Etruscan kings. The antique chronologies gave 753 B.C. As the date of the founding of Rome, 1/2 a century later than the founding of the top notch Phœnician metropolis of Carthage and twenty-3 years after the primary Olympiad. Etruscan tombs of a far in advance date than 753 B.C. Have, but, been excavated inside the Roman Forum.

In that purple-letter century, the 6th century B.C., the Etruscan kings have been expelled (510 B.C.) and Rome have become an aristocratic republic with a lordly class of “patrician” families dominating a commonalty of “plebeians.” Except that it spoke Latin it changed into now not in contrast to many aristocratic Greek republics.

For some centuries the inner history of Rome became the tale of a long and obstinate battle for freedom and a proportion inside the authorities at the a part of the plebeians. It would no longer be hard to find 177Greek parallels to this conflict, which the Greeks would have known as a war of aristocracy with democracy. In the end the plebeians broke down maximum of the exceptional boundaries of the vintage households and mounted a operating equality with them. They destroyed the vintage exclusiveness, and made it viable and suited for Rome to increase her citizenship through the inclusion of increasingly “outsiders.” For whilst she nonetheless struggled at domestic, she become extending her electricity overseas.

REMAINS OF THE ANCIENT ROMAN CISTERNS AT CARTHAGE

REMAINS OF THE ANCIENT ROMAN CISTERNS AT CARTHAGE

Photo: Underwood & Underwood

The extension of Roman electricity started out in the fifth century B.C. Until that point they'd waged conflict, and generally unsuccessful battle, with the Etruscans. There became an Etruscan castle, Veii, only some miles from Rome which the Romans had in no way been able to capture. In 474 B.C., however, a brilliant misfortune got here to the Etruscans. Their fleet changed into destroyed by using the Greeks of Syracuse in Sicily. 178At the same time a wave of Nordic invaders got here down upon them from the north, the Gauls. Caught among Roman and Gaul, the Etruscans fell—and disappear from history. Veii became captured by way of the Romans, The Gauls got here via to Rome and sacked the town (390 B.C.A.D.) but couldn't seize the Capitol. An tried night time marvel became betrayed by the cackling of a few geese, and eventually the invaders were bought off and retired to the north of Italy once more.

The Gaulish raid seems to have invigorated instead of weakened Rome. The Romans conquered and assimilated the Etruscans, and extended their power over all primary Italy from the Arno to Naples. To this they'd reached within a few years of three hundred B.C. Their conquests in Italy have been going on simultaneously with the increase of Philip's electricity in Macedonia and Greece, and the first rate raid of Alexander to Egypt and the Indus. The Romans had become remarkable human beings in the civilized global to the east of them by the wreck-up of Alexander's empire.

To the north of the Roman power were the Gauls; to the south of them had been the Greek settlements of Magna Græcia, that

is to mention of Sicily and of the toe and heel of Italy. The Gauls had been a hardy, warlike humans and the Romans held that boundary by a line of forts and fortified settlements. The Greek towns within the south headed by Tarentum (now Taranto) and by way of Syracuse in Sicily, did now not a lot threaten as fear the Romans. They regarded about for a few assist in opposition to these new conquerors.

We have already advised how the empire of Alexander fell to portions and become divided amongst his generals and companions. Among those adventurers was a kinsman of Alexander's named Pyrrhus, who established himself in Epirus, that's across the Adriatic Sea over towards the heel of Italy. It turned into his ambition to play the a part of Philip of Macedonia to Magna Græcia, and to end up protector and master-widespread of Tarentum, Syracuse and the relaxation of that part of the world. He had what changed into then it very efficient modern-day military; he had an infantry phalanx, cavalry from Thessaly—which was now quite as exact as the authentic Macedonian cavalry—and twenty combating elephants; he invaded Italy and routed the Romans in two huge battles, Heraclea (280 B.C.) and Ausculum (279 B.C.), and 179having pushed them north, he turned his attention to the subjugation of Sicily.

But this brought towards him a extra ambitious enemy than had been the Romans at that point, the Phœnician buying and selling city of Carthage, which was probable then the greatest metropolis in the global. Sicily changed into too near Carthage for a new Alexander to be welcome there, and Carthage was aware of the fate that had befallen her mom town Tyre half a century before. So she sent a fleet to inspire or compel Rome to continue the conflict, and he or she cut the remote places communications of Pyrrhus. Pyrrhus found himself freshly assailed by the Romans, and suffered a disastrous repulse in an assault he had made upon their camp at Beneventum among Naples and Rome.

And abruptly came news that recalled him to Epirus. The Gauls have been raiding south. But this time they had been not raiding down into Italy; the Roman frontier, fortified and guarded, had grow to be too ambitious for them. They have been raiding down via Illyria (that's now Serbia and Albania) to Macedonia and Epirus. Repulsed by means of the Romans, endangered at sea by using the Carthaginians, and threatened at domestic by way of the Gauls, Pyrrhus abandoned his dream of conquest and went home (275 B.C.), and the energy of Rome became extended to the Straits of Messina.

On the Sicilian side of the Straits turned into the Greek city of Messina, and this presently fell into the arms of a gang of pirates. The Carthaginians, who had been already nearly overlords of Sicily and allies of Syracuse, suppressed those pirates (270 B.C.) and put in a Carthaginian garrison there. The pirates appealed to Rome and Rome listened to their complaint. And so across the Straits of Messina the super buying and selling electricity of Carthage and this new conquering humans, the Romans, discovered themselves in antagonism, head to head.

A hundred and eighty

XXXII

ROME AND CARTHAGE

IT became in 264 B.C. That the amazing struggle between Rome and Carthage, the Punic Wars, began. In that 12 months Asoka changed into beginning his reign in Behar and Shi-Hwang-ti turned into a bit toddler, the Museum in Alexandria was nevertheless doing top medical paintings, and the barbaric Gauls have been now in Asia Minor and exacting a tribute

from Pergamum. The exceptional regions of the world have been still separated through insurmountable distances, and probably the rest of mankind heard only vague and far flung rumours of the mortal combat that went on for a century and a 1/2 in Spain, Italy, North Africa and the western Mediterranean, between the remaining stronghold of Semitic strength and Rome, this newcomer amongst Aryan-talking peoples.

That warfare has left its strains upon problems that also stir the sector. Rome triumphed over Carthage, however the competition of Aryan and Semite became to merge itself later on in the battle of Gentile and Jew. Our records now could be coming to events whose consequences and distorted traditions still hold a lingering and expiring vitality in, and exercising a complicating and perplexing impact upon, the conflicts and controversies of to-day.

The First Punic War commenced in 264 B.C. About the pirates of Messina. It advanced right into a conflict for the possession of all Sicily besides the dominions of the Greek king of Syracuse. The advantage of the sea turned into at first with the Carthaginians. They had terrific fighting ships of what became hitherto an unheard-of size, quinqueremes, galleys with five banks of oars and a massive ram. At the battle of Salamis, centuries before, the main battleships had handiest been triremes with three banks. But the Romans, with high-quality electricity and in spite of the fact that they had little naval revel in, set themselves to outbuild the Carthaginians. They manned the brand new navy they created mainly with Greek seamen, and that they invented 181 grappling and boarding to make up for the superior seamanship of the enemy. When the Carthaginian got here as much as ram or shear the oars of the Roman, big grappling irons seized him and the Roman squaddies swarmed aboard him. At Mylæ (260 B.C.) and at Ecnomus (256 B.C.) the Carthaginians were disastrously crushed. They repulsed a Roman touchdown close to Carthage

however were badly overwhelmed at Palermo, losing 100 and four elephants there—to grace any such triumphal procession thru the Forum as Rome had by no means seen before. But after that got here two Roman defeats after which a Roman recuperation. The closing naval forces of Carthage were defeated 182 via it remaining Roman effort on the conflict of the Ægatian Isles (241 B.C.) and Carthage sued for peace. All Sicily besides the dominions of Hiero, king of Syracuse, become ceded to the Romans.

HANNIBAL

HANNIBAL

Bust inside the National Museum at Naples

Photo: Mansell

For twenty-two years Rome and Carthage saved the peace. Both had problem enough at domestic. In Italy the Gauls got here south again, threatened Rome—which in a state of panic supplied human sacrifices to the Gods!—and had been routed at Telamon. Rome pushed ahead to the Alps, and even extended her dominions down the Adriatic coast to Illyria. Carthage suffered from home insurrections and from revolts in Corsica and Sardinia, and displayed a long way much less recuperative power. Finally, an act of intolerable aggression, Rome seized and annexed the two revolting islands.

Spain at that time turned into Carthaginian as far north as the river Ebro. To that boundary the Romans confined them. Any crossing of the Ebro by using the Carthaginians changed into to be considered an act of warfare against the Romans. At ultimate in 218 B.C. The Carthaginians, provoked by using new Roman aggressions, did pass this river underneath a younger wellknown named Hannibal, one of the most splendid commanders inside the complete of history. He marched his army from Spain over the Alps into Italy, raised the Gauls against the Romans, and carried on the Second Punic War in

Italy itself for fifteen years. He inflicted extremely good defeats upon the Romans at Lake Trasimere and at Cannæ, and for the duration of all his Italian campaigns no Roman military stood towards him and escaped disaster. But a Roman army had landed at Marseilles and reduce his communications with Spain; he had no siege train, and he ought to by no means seize Rome. Finally the Carthaginians, threatened through the riot of the Numidians at home, have been pressured again upon the defence in their personal city in Africa, a Roman navy crossed into Africa, and Hannibal experienced his first defeat underneath its partitions on the struggle of Zama (202 B.C. At the fingers of Scipio Africanus the Elder. The battle of Zama ended this Second Punic War. Carthage capitulated; she surrendered Spain and her struggle fleet; she paid an huge indemnity and agreed to give up Hannibal to the vengeance of the Romans. But Hannibal escaped and fled to Asia where later, being in hazard of falling into the palms of his relentless enemies, he took poison and died.

183For fifty-six years Rome and the shorn metropolis of Carthage have been at peace. And in the meantime Rome unfold her empire over pressured and divided Greece, invaded Asia Minor, and defeated Antiochus III, the Seleucid monarch, at Magnesia in Lydia. She made Egypt, nonetheless below the Ptolemies, and Pergamum and most of the small states of Asia Minor into “Allies,” or, as we need to name them now, “protected states.”

Meanwhile Carthage, subjugated and enfeebled, have been slowly regaining something of her former prosperity. Her recovery revived the dislike and suspicion of the Romans. She became attacked upon the most shallow and synthetic of quarrels (149 B.C.), she made an obstinate and bitter resistance, stood a long siege and turned into stormed (146 B.C.). The road combating, or massacre, lasted six days; it turned into surprisingly bloody, and whilst the castle capitulated handiest about fifty thousand of the Carthaginian

populace remained alive out of 1 / 4 of a million. They were offered into slavery, and the metropolis was burnt and elaborately destroyed. The blackened ruins have been ploughed and sown as a type of ceremonial effacement.

Map: The Extent of the Roman Power & its Alliances approximately

150 <small>B.C.</small>

So ended the Third Punic War. Of all of the Semitic states and cities that had flourished within the global 5 centuries earlier than only one little u . S . Remained free under local rulers. This become Judea, which had liberated itself from the Seleucids and turned into underneath the guideline 184of the native Maccabean princes. By this time it had its Bible nearly complete, and became developing the exceptional traditions of the Jewish global as we understand it now. It became herbal that the Carthaginians, Phoenicians and kindred peoples dispersed approximately the sector must discover a common hyperlink of their practically identical language and in this literature of wish and braveness. To a big volume they were nevertheless the investors and bankers of the arena. The Semitic global had been submerged in place of replaced.

Jerusalem, which has constantly been as a substitute the symbol than the centre of Judaism, turned into taken via the Romans in sixty five B.C.; and after diverse vicissitudes of quasi- independence and rise up became besieged by means of them in 70 A.D. And captured after a stubborn warfare. The Temple was destroyed. A later rebellion in 132 A.D. Finished its destruction, and the Jerusalem we recognise to-day become rebuilt later under Roman auspices. A temple to the Roman god, Jupiter Capitolinus, stood within the region of the Temple, and Jews were forbidden to inhabit the town.

THE GROWTH OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE

NOW this new Roman electricity which arose to dominate the western global within the 2nd and primary centuries B.C. Changed into in numerous respects a different component from any of the superb empires that had hitherto prevailed within the civilized world. It become not at the start a monarchy, and it become now not the creation of anyone excellent conqueror. It was not certainly the primary of republican empires; Athens had dominated a set of Allies and dependents inside the time of Pericles, and Carthage while she entered upon her deadly battle with Rome was mistress of Sardinia and Corsica, Morocco, Algiers, Tunis, and maximum of Spain and Sicily. But it become the primary republican empire that escaped extinction and went directly to fresh tendencies.

The centre of this new machine lay a long way to the west of the extra ancient centres of empire, which had hitherto been the river valleys of Mesopotamia and Egypt. This westward role enabled Rome to herald to civilization quite fresh areas and peoples. The Roman electricity extended to Morocco and Spain, and turned into presently able to thrust north-westward over what is now France and Belgium to Britain and north-eastward into Hungary and South Russia. But on the other hand it turned into by no means capable of hold itself in Central Asia or Persia because they were too some distance from its administrative centres. It blanketed therefore high-quality loads of sparkling Nordic Aryan- speaking peoples, it presently included almost all of the Greek people inside the world, and its population turned into less strongly Hamitic and Semitic than that of any preceding empire.

For a few centuries this Roman Empire did no longer fall into the grooves of precedent that had so swiftly swallowed up Persian and Greek, and all that time it evolved. The rulers of the Medes and Persians have become entirely Babylonized in a era or so; they took over the tiara of the king of kings and the temples and priesthoods of his gods; Alexander and his successors accompanied in the identical easy path of assimilation; the Seleucid monarchs had a whole lot the identical court docket and administrative strategies as Nebuchadnezzar; the Ptolemies became Pharaohs and altogether Egyptian. They have been assimilated simply as before them the Semitic conquerors of the Sumerians had been assimilated. But the Romans dominated in their very own metropolis, and for some centuries stored to the laws of their own nature. The only people who exercised any fantastic mental have an effect on upon them earlier than the second one or 0.33 century A.D. Had been the kindred and similar Greeks. So that the Roman Empire turned into basically a primary try and rule a outstanding dominion upon especially Aryan strains. It became thus far a new sample in history, it was an improved Aryan republic. The old pattern of a personal conqueror ruling over a capital town that had grown up spherical the temple of a harvest god did no longer practice to it. The Romans had gods and temples, but like the gods of the Greeks their gods had been quasi-human immortals, divine patricians. The Romans additionally had blood sacrifices and even made human ones in instances of pressure, things they will have learnt to do from their dusky Etruscan instructors; however until Rome became long past its zenith neither priest nor temple performed a huge component in Roman records.

The Roman Empire become a boom, an unplanned novel boom; the Roman humans discovered themselves engaged almost unawares in a big administrative experiment. It cannot be called a a hit test. In the cease their empire collapsed altogether. And it changed enormously in form and method

from century to century. It changed extra in a hundred years than Bengal or Mesopotamia or Egypt changed in a thousand. It turned into constantly changing. It never attained to any fixity.

In a feel the test failed. In a feel the test remains unfinished, and Europe and America to-day are still working out the riddles of global-extensive statescraft first confronted by way of the Roman people.

It is nicely for the pupil of history to undergo in mind the very first-rate modifications now not only in political however in social and moral matters that went on at some stage in the period of Roman dominion. There is a good deal too robust an inclination in human beings's minds to think of the Roman 187rule as some thing completed and stable, firm, rounded, noble and decisive. Macaulay's Lays of Ancient Rome, S.P.Q.R. The elder Cato, the Scipios, Julius Cæsar, Diocletian, Constantine the Great, triumphs, orations, gladiatorial combats and Christian martyrs are all blended up collectively in a photograph of something high and cruel and dignified. The objects of that photograph have to be disentangled. They are accrued at exclusive factors from a process of exchange profounder than that which separates the London of William the Conqueror from the London of to-day.

We can also very readily divide the growth of Rome into four stages. The first degree commenced after the sack of Rome by way of the Goths in 390 B.C. And went on till the end of the First Punic War (240 B.C.). We can also name this degree the level of the Assimilative Republic. It turned into perhaps the finest, most feature degree in Roman history. The age-lengthy dissensions of patrician and plebeian were drawing to it near, the Etruscan threat had come to an stop, no one changed into very rich but nor very poor, and maximum men have been public-lively. It changed into a republic just like the republic

of the South African Boers before 1900 or just like the northern states of the American union among 1800 and 1850; a unfastened- farmers republic. At the outset of this degree Rome become a little nation scarcely twenty miles rectangular. She fought the robust but kindred states approximately her, and sought no longer their destruction however coalescence. Her centuries of civil dissension had trained her humans in compromise and concessions. Some of the defeated cities became altogether Roman with a voting share in the authorities, some have become self-governing with the proper to trade and marry in Rome; garrisons full of citizens were installation at strategic points and colonies of various privileges based most of the freshly conquered humans. Great roads have been made. The speedy Latinization of all Italy was the inevitable outcome of this type of coverage. In 89 B.C. All of the unfastened inhabitants of Italy have become residents of the metropolis of Rome. Formally the complete Roman Empire became at remaining an extended city. In 212 A.D. Every loose guy within the complete volume of the empire become given citizenship; the proper, if he ought to get there, to vote within the city assembly in Rome.

This extension of citizenship to tractable towns and to entire nations was the exceptional device of Roman expansion. It 188reversed the antique method of conquest and assimilation altogether. By the Roman method the conquerors assimilated the conquered.

THE FORUM AT ROME AS IT IS TO-DAY

THE FORUM AT ROME AS IT IS TO-DAY

But after the First Punic War and the annexation of Sicily, though the vintage manner of assimilation still went on, another technique arose by its facet. Sicily as an example turned into dealt with as a conquered prey. It became declared an “estate” of the Roman human beings. Its rich soil and industrious population was exploited to make Rome rich. The

patricians and the greater influential some of the plebeians secured the important share of that wealth. And the conflict additionally brought in a huge deliver of slaves. Before the First Punic War the population of the republic were largely a population of citizen farmers. Military carrier changed into their privilege and liability. While they had been on active provider their farms fell into debt and a new massive-scale slave agriculture grew up; once they again they found their produce in opposition with slave-grown produce from Sicily and from the brand new estates at home. Times had modified. The republic had 189altered its character. Not most effective was Sicily inside the fingers of Rome, the not unusual guy changed into in the palms of the rich creditor and the rich competitor. Rome had entered upon its 2d level, the Republic of Adventurous Rich Men.

For two hundred years the Roman soldier farmers had struggled for freedom and a percentage inside the government of their nation; for one hundred years they'd loved their privileges. The First Punic War wasted them and robbed them of all that they had received.

RELICS OF ROMAN RULE

RELICS OF ROMAN RULE

Ruins of Coliseum in Tunis

Photo: Jacques Boyer

The fee in their electoral privileges had also evaporated. The governing our bodies of the Roman republic were two in quantity. The first and extra vital become the Senate. This became a frame originally of patricians after which of outstanding guys of all kinds, who have been summoned to it first through sure powerful officers, the consuls and censors. Like the British House of Lords it became a meeting of notable landowners, outstanding politicians, large enterprise men and the 190like. It turned into a great deal extra just like

the British House of Lords than it was just like the American Senate. For three centuries, from the Punic Wars onward, it became the centre of Roman political notion and reason. The 2nd body turned into the Popular Assembly. This was supposed to be an assembly of all of the residents of Rome. When Rome become a touch nation twenty miles square this turned into a probable gathering. When the citizenship of Rome had spread beyond the confines in Italy, it became an altogether impossible one. Its conferences, proclaimed with the aid of horn-blowing from the Capitol and the metropolis partitions, became increasingly a meeting of political hacks and metropolis riff-raff. In the fourth century B.C. The Popular Assembly became a considerable take a look at upon the Senate, a able illustration of the claims and rights of the commonplace man. By the cease of the Punic Wars it turned into an impotent relic of a vanquished popular control. No powerful felony take a look at remained upon the big guys.

THE GREAT ROMAN ARCH AT CTESIPHON NEAR BAGDAD

THE GREAT ROMAN ARCH AT CTESIPHON NEAR BAGDAD

Nothing of the character of consultant authorities changed into ever added into the Roman republic. No one concept of electing delegates to represent the need of the residents. This is a totally vital factor for the scholar to understand. The Popular Assembly 191by no means became the equivalent of the American House of Representatives or the British House of Commons. In concept it was all the residents; in practice it ceased to be whatever in any respect well worth consideration.

The common citizen of the Roman Empire became therefore in a completely poor case after the Second Punic War; he turned into impoverished, he had regularly lost his farm, he turned into ousted from profitable manufacturing by slaves, and he had no political electricity left to him to treatment these

things. The best methods of popular expression left to a human beings with none form of political expression are the strike and the insurrection. The tale of the second and first centuries B.C., to date as inner politics pass, is a tale of futile innovative upheaval. The scale of this history will no longer permit us to inform of the elaborate struggles of that point, of the attempts to break up estates and restore the land to the free farmer, of proposals to abolish debts in whole or in element. There became insurrection and civil warfare. In 73 B.C., the distresses of Italy were greater by way of a extremely good revolt, of the slaves under Spartacus. The slaves of Italy revolted with some impact, for among them had been the trained combatants of the gladiatorial indicates. For two years Spartacus held out inside the crater of Vesuvius, which seemed at that time to be an extinct volcano. This insurrection become defeated at final and suppressed with frantic cruelty. Six thousand captured Spartacists were crucified along the Appian Way, the high-quality motorway that runs southward out of Rome (71 B.C.).

The common guy never made head in opposition to the forces that were subjugating and degrading him. But the massive rich guys who have been overcoming him were even in his defeat preparing a new power inside the Roman international over themselves and him, the energy of the navy.

Before the Second Punic War the army of Rome was a levy of loose farmers, who, in line with their great, rode or marched afoot to battle. This changed into a superb force for wars near handy, but no longer the sort of military with a view to go overseas and endure lengthy campaigns with endurance. And moreover because the slaves expanded and the estates grew, the supply of loose- spirited preventing farmers declined. It turned into a popular leader named Marius who delivered a new aspect. North Africa after the overthrow of the Carthaginian civilization had turn out to be a semi-barbaric kingdom, the dominion of Numidia. 192The Roman strength

fell into war with Jugurtha, king of this country, and skilled great difficulties in subduing him. Marius became made consul, in a section of public indignation, to give up this discreditable warfare. This he did through raising paid troops and drilling them difficult. Jugurtha turned into brought in chains to Rome (106 B.C.) and Marius, when his time of office had expired, hung on to his consulship illegally with his newly created legions. There changed into no electricity in Rome to restrain him.

With Marius started out the third phase within the development of the Roman electricity, the Republic of the Military Commanders. For now commenced a duration in which the leaders of the paid legions fought for the mastery of the Roman world. Against Marius became pitted the aristocratic Sulla who had served beneath him in Africa. Each in turn made a brilliant massacre of his political warring parties. Men had been proscribed and completed by using the thousand, and their estates were offered. After the bloody contention of those two and the horror of the rebellion of Spartacus, came a segment wherein Lucullus and Pompey the Great and Crassus and Julius Cæsar were the masters of armies and dominated affairs. It was Crassus who defeated Spartacus. Lucullus conquered Asia Minor and penetrated to Armenia, and retired with extraordinary wealth into private life. Crassus thrusting similarly invaded Persia and was defeated and slain by using the Parthians. After a protracted contention Pompey changed into defeated with the aid of Julius Cæsar (48 B.C.) and murdered in Egypt, leaving Julius Cæsar sole master of the Roman global.

The figure of Julius Cæsar is one which has stirred the human imagination out of all share to its merit or authentic significance. He has become a legend and a symbol. For us he's mainly crucial as marking the transition from the phase of army adventurers to the start of the fourth level in Roman expansion, the Early Empire. For no matter the profoundest

economic and political convulsions, regardless of civil warfare and social degeneration, during all this time the boundaries of the Roman country crept outward and continued to creep outward to their most approximately a hundred A.D. There had been some thing like an ebb at some stage in the dubious levels of the Second Punic War, and again a manifest loss of vigour before the reconstruction of the military by Marius. The rebellion of Spartacus 193 marked a third segment. Julius Cæsar made his recognition as a military leader in Gaul, which is now France and Belgium. (The chief tribes inhabiting this u . S . Belonged to the equal Celtic humans as the Gauls who had occupied north Italy for a time, and who had afterwards raided into Asia Minor and settled down as the Galatians.) Cæsar drove again a German invasion of Gaul and delivered all that usa to the empire, and he twice crossed the Straits of Dover into Britain (55 and 54 B.C.), wherein but he made no everlasting conquest. Meanwhile Pompey the Great changed into consolidating Roman conquests that reached in the east to the Caspian Sea.

THE COLUMN OF TRAJAN AT ROME

THE COLUMN OF TRAJAN AT ROME

Representing his conquests at Dacia and someplace else

At this time, the center of the first century B.C., the Roman Senate turned into still the nominal centre of the Roman government, appointing consuls and different officials, granting powers and so forth; and some of politicians, among whom Cicero became an exceptional 194figure, were suffering to hold the tremendous traditions of republican Rome and to maintain admire for its laws. But the spirit of citizenship had long gone from Italy with the losing away of the free farmers; it turned into a land now of slaves and impoverished guys with neither the knowledge nor the preference for freedom. There become not anything anything at the back of those republican leaders inside the Senate, while at the back of the superb adventurers they feared and desired to manipulate have been

the legions. Over the heads of the Senate Crassus and Pompey and Cæsar divided the rule of the Empire between them (The First Triumvirate). When currently Crassus was killed at remote Carrhæ by means of the Parthians, Pompey and Cæsar fell out. Pompey took up the republican facet, and laws were surpassed to deliver Cæsar to trial for his breaches of regulation and his disobedience to the decrees of the Senate.

It changed into illegal for a popular to bring his troops out of the boundary of his command, and the boundary among Cæsar's command and Italy was the Rubicon. In 49 B.C. He crossed the Rubicon, pronouncing "The die is forged" and marched upon Pompey and Rome.

It had been the custom in Rome in the beyond, in periods of army extremity, to pick a "dictator" with practically unlimited powers to rule via the disaster. After his overthrow of Pompey, Cæsar became made dictator first for ten years after which (in 45 B.C.) for existence. In impact he turned into made monarch of the empire for life. There was speak of a king, a word abhorrent to Rome since the expulsion of the Etruscans 5 centuries earlier than. Cæsar refused to be king, but adopted throne and sceptre. After his defeat of Pompey, Cæsar had long gone on into Egypt and had made love to Cleopatra, the final of the Ptolemies, the goddess queen of Egypt. She seems to have turned his head very absolutely. He had delivered returned to Rome the Egyptian concept of a god-king. His statue become installation in a temple with an inscription "To the Unconquerable God." The expiring republicanism of Rome flared up in a ultimate protest, and Cæsar changed into stabbed to dying in the Senate at the foot of the statue of his murdered rival, Pompey the Great.

Thirteen years extra of this warfare of bold personalities followed. There become a second Triumvirate of Lepidus, Mark Antony and Octavian Cæsar, the latter the nephew of

Julius Cæsar. Octavian like his uncle took the poorer, hardier western provinces 195 where the first-rate legions were recruited. In 31 B.C., he defeated Mark Antony, his handiest severe rival, at the naval struggle of Actium, and made himself sole master of the Roman world. But Octavian changed into a man of different pleasant altogether from Julius Cæsar. He had no foolish craving to be God or King. He had no queen-lover that he needed to dazzle. He restored freedom to the Senate and those of Rome. He declined to be dictator. The thankful Senate in return gave him the reality instead of the sorts of strength. He become to be called no longer King certainly, but “Princeps” and “Augustus.” He have become Augustus Cæsar, the primary of the Roman emperors (27 B.C. To fourteen A.D.).

He become accompanied by Tiberius Cæsar (14 to 37 A.D.) and he by others, Caligula, Claudius, Nero and so on up to Trajan (98 A.D.), Hadrian (117 A.D.), Antonius Pius (138 A.D.) and Marcus Aurelius (161- a hundred and eighty A.D.). All these emperors were emperors of the legions. The infantrymen made them, and a few the squaddies destroyed. Gradually the Senate fades out of Roman-records, and the emperor and his administrative officials update it. The boundaries of the empire crept ahead now to their utmost limits. Most of Britain become brought to the empire, Transylvania turned into brought in as a new province, Dacia; Trajan crossed the Euphrates. Hadrian had an concept that reminds us right now of what had took place at the alternative quit of the old global. Like Shi-Hwang-ti he built walls towards the northern barbarians; one throughout Britain and a palisade between the Rhine and the Danube. He deserted a number of the acquisitions of Trajan.

The enlargement of the Roman Empire turned into at an stop.

XXXIV

BETWEEN ROME AND CHINA

THE second and first centuries B.C. Mark a new phase inside the history of mankind. Mesopotamia and the eastern Mediterranean are now not the centre of interest. Both Mesopotamia and Egypt have been nonetheless fertile, populous and pretty prosperous, but they had been no longer the dominant regions of the sector. Power had drifted to the west and to the east. Two top notch empires now ruled the world, this new Roman Empire and the renascent Empire of China. Rome prolonged its strength to the Euphrates, however it was by no means capable of get beyond that boundary. It turned into too faraway. Beyond the Euphrates the previous Persian and Indian dominions of the Seleucids fell under a variety of of latest masters. China, now underneath the Han dynasty, which had replaced the Ts'in dynasty at the dying of Shi-Hwang-ti, had extended its energy throughout Tibet and over the excessive mountain passes of the Pamirs into western Turkestan. But there, too, it reached its extremes. Beyond turned into too a long way.

China right now turned into the best, pleasant organized and maximum civilized political machine within the global. It was advanced in vicinity and population to the Roman Empire at its zenith. It was feasible then for these sizable systems to flourish within the identical world on the same time in almost complete lack of information of every other. The approach of verbal exchange each through sea and land became not yet sufficiently evolved and prepared for them to come back to an instantaneous clash.

Yet they reacted upon each different in a totally remarkable way, and their impact upon the destiny of the areas that lay between them, upon principal Asia and India, changed into profound. A positive quantity of trade trickled through, through camel caravans throughout Persia, for instance, and with the aid of coasting ships by means of manner of India and the Red Sea. In sixty six B.C. Roman troops beneath Pompey observed within the footsteps of Alexander the Great, and marched up the Japanese shores of the Caspian Sea. In 102 A.D. A Chinese expeditionary pressure under Pan Chau reached the Caspian, and sent emissaries to file upon the electricity of Rome. But many centuries were still to pass before specific know-how and direct intercourse were to hyperlink the high-quality parallel worlds of Europe and Eastern Asia.

To the north of each those fantastic empires had been barbaric wildernesses. What is now Germany turned into largely forest lands; the forests extended a ways into Russia and made a home for the gigantic aurochs, a bull of almost elephantine size. Then to the north of the fantastic mountain masses of Asia stretched a band of deserts, steppes after which forests and frozen lands. In the eastward lap of the improved a part of Asia became the fantastic triangle of Manchuria. Large parts of these areas, stretching between South Russia and Turkestan into Manchuria, have been and are regions of awesome climatic lack of confidence. Their rainfall has various significantly in the route of a few centuries They are lands treacherous to guy. For years they will convey pasture and maintain cultivation, and then will come an age of decline in humidity and a cycle of killing droughts.

A CHINESE COVERED JAR OF GREEN-GLAZED
EARTHENWARE

A CHINESE COVERED JAR OF GREEN-GLAZED EARTHENWARE

Han Dynasty (cutting-edge with the late Roman republic and early Empire)

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

The western part of this barbaric north from the German forests to South Russia and Turkestan and from Gothland to the Alps become the location of foundation of the Nordic peoples and of the Aryan speech. The Japanese steppes and deserts of Mongolia changed into the place of beginning of the Hunnish or Mongolian or Tartar or Turkish peoples—for most of these numerous peoples have been akin in language, race, and manner of life. And because the Nordic peoples appear to have been always overflowing their very own borders and urgent south upon the developing civilizations of Mesopotamia and the Mediterranean coast, so the Hunnish tribes sent their surplus as wanderers, raiders and conquerors into the settled regions of China. Periods of plenty in the north might imply a boom in populace there; a scarcity of grass, a spell of farm animal disorder, could drive the hungry warlike tribesmen south.

For a time there had been simultaneously pretty effective Empires in the global capable of preserving returned the barbarians and even forcing ahead the frontiers of the imperial peace. The thrust of the Han empire from north China into Mongolia was strong and continuous. The Chinese population welled up over the barrier of the Great Wall. Behind the imperial frontier guards came the Chinese farmer with horse and plough, ploughing up the grass lands and enclosing the winter pasture. The Hunnish peoples raided and murdered the settlers, but the Chinese punitive expeditions were an excessive amount of for them. The nomads were confronted with the selection of settling right down to the plough and becoming Chinese tax-payers or shifting searching for clean summer season pastures. Some took the former route and have

been absorbed. Some drifted north-eastward and eastward over the mountain passes down into western Turkestan.

VASE OF BRONZE FORM, UNGLAZED STONEWARE

VASE OF BRONZE FORM, UNGLAZED STONEWARE

Han Dynasty (B.C. 206 - A.D. 220)

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

This westward power of the Mongolian horsemen was going on from 2 hundred B.C. Onward. It changed into generating a westward strain upon the Aryan tribes, and these once more have been pressing upon the Roman frontiers geared up to interrupt thru without delay there has been any weak spot obvious. The Parthians, who were apparently a Scythian human beings with a few Mongolian admixture, got here all the way down to the Euphrates by using the primary century B.C. They fought in opposition to Pompey the Great in 199his jap raid. They defeated and killed Crassus. They replaced the Seleucid monarchy in Persia with the aid of a dynasty of Parthian kings, the Arsacid dynasty.

CHINESE VESSEL IN BRONZE, IN FORM OF A GOOSE

CHINESE VESSEL IN BRONZE, IN FORM OF A GOOSE

Dating from before the time of Shi-Hwang-ti. Such a piece of labor suggests a excessive level of comfort and humour

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

But for a time the line of least resistance for hungry nomads lay neither to the west nor the east however thru valuable Asia and then south-eastward thru the Khyber Pass into India. It changed into India which obtained the Mongolian force in these centuries of Roman and Chinese power. A series of raiding conquerors poured down through the Punjab into the notable plains to loot and break. The empire of Asoka changed into damaged up, and for a time the history of India passes into

darkness. A certain Kushan dynasty founded through the “Indo- Scythians”—one of the raiding peoples—ruled for a time over North India and maintained a sure order. These invasions went on for numerous centuries. For a massive part of the fifth century A.D. India become via the Ephthalites or White Huns, who levied tribute at the small Indian princes and held India in terror. Every summer time these Ephthalites pastured in western Turkestan, each autumn they came down via the passes to terrorize India.

2 hundredIn the second one century A.D. A fantastic misfortune came upon the Roman and Chinese empires that possibly weakened the resistance of both to barbarian pressure. This become a pestilence of unexampled virulence. It raged for eleven years in China and disorganized the social framework profoundly. The Han dynasty fell, and a brand new age of department and confusion began from which China did no longer pretty recover until the 7th century A.D. With the coming of the exquisite Tang dynasty.

The infection spread via Asia to Europe. It raged in the course of the Roman Empire from 164 to 180 A.D. It certainly weakened the Roman imperial cloth very seriously. We start to hear of depopulation inside the Roman provinces after this, and there has been a marked deterioration inside the energy and efficiency of presidency. At any price we currently discover the frontier no longer invulnerable, however giving way first on this vicinity after which in that. A new Nordic people, the Goths, coming initially from Gothland in Sweden, had migrated across Russia to the Volga place and the seashores of the Black Sea and brought to the ocean and piracy. By the end of the second one century they may have started to sense the westward thrust of the Huns. In 247 they crossed the Danube in a exceptional land raid, and defeated and killed the Emperor Decius in a warfare in what’s now Serbia. In 236 any other Germanic humans, the Franks, had broken bounds upon the decrease Rhine, and the Alemanni

had poured into Alsace. The legions in Gaul thrust back their invaders, but the Goths inside the Balkan peninsula raided again and again. The province of Dacia vanished from Roman records.

A kick back had come to the delight and confidence of Rome. In 270-275 Rome, which had been an open and cozy city for 3 centuries, become fortified by means of the Emperor Aurelian.

201

XXXV

THE COMMON MAN'S LIFE UNDER THE EARLY ROMAN EMPIRE

BEFORE we inform of the way this Roman empire which changed into constructed up within the centuries B.C., and which flourished in peace and security from the days of Augustus Cæsar onward for 2 centuries, fell into ailment and become damaged up, it could be as well to devote some attention to the lifestyles of the everyday people at some point of this awesome realm. Our history has come down now to within 2000 years of our very own time; and the life of the civilized people, both below the Peace of Rome and the Peace of the Han dynasty, became beginning to resemble increasingly clearly the lifestyles in their civilized successors to-day.

In the western world coined cash was now in not unusual use; out of doors the priestly global there have been many people of independent way who have been neither officials of the government nor monks; people travelled approximately extra freely than they had ever executed earlier than, and there have been high roads and resorts for them. Compared with the past,

with the time before 500 B.C., existence had become a good deal extra loose. Before that date civilized men were sure to a district or united states of america, have been sure to a tradition and lived inside a very limited horizon; most effective the nomads traded and travelled.

But neither the Roman Peace nor the Peace of the Han dynasty meant a uniform civilization over the big regions they controlled. There had been very awesome nearby variations and brilliant contrasts and inequalities of subculture among one district and another, simply as there are to-day underneath the British Peace in India. The Roman garrisons and colonies were dotted here and there over this splendid area, worshipping Roman gods and speaking the Latin language; however where there were towns and towns before the approaching of the Romans, they went on, subordinated certainly but managing their own affairs, and, for a time at the least, worshipping their own gods of their own style. Over Greece, Asia Minor, Egypt and the Hellenized East 202generally, the Latin language never prevailed. Greek ruled there invincibly. Saul of Tarsus, who have become the apostle Paul, was a Jew and a Roman citizen; however he spoke and wrote Greek and no longer Hebrew. Even on the court of the Parthian dynasty, which had overthrown the Greek Seleucids in Persia, and changed into pretty outdoor the Roman imperial limitations, Greek became the trendy language. In a few parts of Spain and in North Africa, the Carthaginian language also hung on for a long term regardless of the destruction of Carthage. Such a town as Seville, which had been a prosperous metropolis long before the Roman name have been heard of, stored its Semitic goddess and preserved its Semitic speech for generations, despite a colony of Roman veterans at Italica a few miles away. Septimius Severus, who became emperor from 193 to 211 A.D., spoke Carthaginian as his mom speech. He learnt Latin later as a foreign tongue; 203and it is recorded that his sister never learnt Latin and carried out her Roman family within the Punic language.

A Gladiator (present day illustration)

In such countries as Gaul and Britain and in provinces like Dacia (now kind of Roumania) and Pannonia (Hungary south of the Danube), in which there were no pre-current superb cities and temples and cultures, the Roman empire did but “Latinize.” It civilized those countries for the primary time. It created towns and towns where Latin was from the primary the dominant speech, and where Roman gods have been served and Roman customs and models followed. The Roumanian, Italian, French and Spanish languages, all variations and adjustments of Latin, stay to remind us of this extension of Latin speech and customs. North-west Africa additionally have become at closing largely Latin-talking. Egypt, Greece and the rest of the empire to the east had been never Latinized. They remained Egyptian and Greek in way of life and spirit. And even in Rome, amongst knowledgeable guys, Greek turned into learnt because the language of a gentleman and Greek literature and mastering were very, nicely favored to Latin.

In this miscellaneous empire the approaches of doing paintings and business have been naturally additionally very miscellaneous. The leader enterprise of the settled world became still in large part agriculture. We have informed how in Italy the strong free farmers who have been the backbone of the early Roman republic had been changed via estates worked with the aid of slave labour after the Punic wars. The Greek global had had very various methods of cultivation, from the Arcadian plan, in which each free citizen toiled along with his own hands, to Sparta, in which it was a dishonour to work and in which agricultural paintings became accomplished by means of a unique slave elegance, the Helots. But that turned into historical records now, and over most of the Hellenized world the estate system and slave-gangs had spread. The agricultural slaves have been captives who spoke many distinctive languages in order that they couldn't apprehend

every other, or they were born slaves; they had no harmony to face up to oppression, no culture of rights, no expertise, for they couldn't examine nor write. Although they got here to form a majority of the U.S.A. Population they never made a success insurrection. The rise up of Spartacus within the first century B.C. Become an rebel of the special slaves who were educated for the gladiatorial combats. The agricultural employees in Italy within the latter days of the Republic and the early Empire suffered frightful indignities; they could be chained at night to prevent break out or have half the head shaved to make it hard. They had no better halves in their very own; they could be outraged, mutilated and killed via their masters. A master ought to promote his slave to combat beasts in the area. If a slave slew his grasp, all the slaves in his household and now not merely the murderer have been crucified. In some parts of Greece, in Athens considerably, the lot of the slave became by no means pretty so frightful as this, but it turned into nonetheless detestable. To such a population the barbarian invaders who currently broke via the protecting line of the legions, came no longer as enemies however as liberators.

POMPEII

POMPEII

“Note the ruts in roadway worn by using chariot wheels.”

The slave machine had unfold to most industries and to every kind of paintings that would be accomplished by means of gangs. Mines and metallurgical operations, the rowing of galleys, street-making and huge building operations were all in large part slave occupations. And nearly all home provider was completed via slaves. There were poor loose-men and there had been freed-men inside the cities and upon the usa facet, working for themselves or even working for wages. They had been artizans, supervisors and so forth, people of a new cash- paid magnificence running in competition with slave people; however we do now not realize what share they

manufactured from the overall populace. It in all likelihood various extensively in extraordinary locations and at special periods. And there have been also many modifications of slavery, from the slavery that became chained at night and pushed with whips to the farm or quarry, to the slave whose grasp found it fantastic to leave him to cultivate his patch or work his craft and personal his spouse like a free-guy, furnished he paid in a best quittance to his owner.

There had been armed slaves. At the hole of the length of the Punic wars, in 264 B.C., the Etruscan sport of putting slaves to fight for his or her lives became revived in Rome. It grew swiftly elegant; and shortly every awesome Roman rich man saved a retinue of gladiators, who on occasion fought within the area however whose actual business it became to act as his bodyguard of bullies. And additionally there were discovered slaves. The conquests of the later Republic were most of the rather civilized cities of Greece, North Africa and Asia Minor; and that they brought in lots of pretty educated captives. The tutor of a young Roman of top circle of relatives become generally a slave. A wealthy guy could have a Greek slave as librarian, and slave secretaries and found out men. He would hold his poet as he could preserve a performing canine. In this surroundings of slavery the traditions of present day literary criticism have been developed. The slaves nevertheless boast and quarrel in our opinions. There were enterprising those who offered wise boy slaves and had them educated for sale. Slaves had been educated as e-book copyists, as jewellers, and for countless professional callings.

206

THE COLISEUM, ROME

THE COLISEUM, ROME

Photo: Underwood & Underwood

INTERIOR OF THE COLISEUM AT IT APPEARS TO-DAY

INTERIOR OF THE COLISEUM AT IT APPEARS TO-DAY

But there have been very great modifications within the function of a slave throughout the four hundred years among the whole days of conquest below the republic of rich guys and the days of disintegration that accompanied the great pestilence. In the second century B.C. Warfare-captives had been considerable, manners gross and brutal; the slave had no rights and there has been scarcely an outrage the reader can imagine that become now not practised upon slaves in those days. But already inside the first century A.D. There was a perceptible improvement within the mind-set of the Roman civilization towards slavery. Captives had been no longer so ample for one issue, and slaves have been dearer. And slave- owners started out to realise that the profit and comfort they got from their slaves expanded with the self-recognize of those unfortunates. But also the moral tone of the community become growing, and a sense of justice turned into becoming powerful. The better mentality of Greece become qualifying the vintage Roman harshness. Restrictions upon cruelty had been made, a master would possibly now not promote his slave to combat beasts, a slave turned into given belongings rights in what was known as his peculium, slaves had been paid wages as an encouragement and stimulus, a form of slave marriage became recognized. Very many kinds of agriculture do not lend themselves to gang running, or require gang employees most effective at certain seasons. In regions in which such conditions prevailed the slave currently became a serf, paying his proprietor part of his produce or working for him at certain seasons.

When we begin to realize how basically this first rate Latin and Greek-speakme Roman Empire of the primary centuries A.D. Became a slave kingdom and the way small became the minority who had any satisfaction or freedom of their lives, we lay our arms at the clues to its decay and disintegrate. There turned into little of what we ought to call own family life, few houses of temperate residing and active notion and study;

colleges and colleges were few and a ways among. The unfastened will and the free thoughts have been nowhere to be observed. The extremely good roads, the ruins of exceptional homes, the culture of regulation and strength it left for the astonishment of succeeding generations should not conceal from us that every one its outer splendour turned into built upon thwarted wills, stifled intelligence, and crippled and perverted desires. And even the minority who lorded it over that huge realm of subjugation and of restraint and forced labour have been uneasy and unhappy in their souls; artwork and literature, technological know-how and philosophy, which are the culmination of free and satisfied minds, waned in that environment. There become tons copying and imitation, an abundance of artistic artificers, much slavish pedantry among the servile men of gaining knowledge of, but the complete Roman empire in four centuries produced nothing to set beside the bold and noble highbrow activities of the relatively little town of Athens at some stage in its one century of greatness. Athens decayed below the Roman sceptre. The science of Alexandria decayed. The spirit of guy, it seemed, turned into decaying in those days.

208

XXXVI

RELIGIOUS DEVELOPMENTS UNDER THE ROMAN EMPIRE

THE soul of man beneath that Latin and Greek empire of the first centuries of the Christian era turned into a involved and pissed off soul. Compulsion and cruelty reigned; there were satisfaction and display but little honour; little serenity or steadfast happiness. The unfortunate were despised and wretched; the fortunate have been insecure and feverishly keen for gratifications. In a exquisite variety of towns existence

focused on the purple pleasure of the arena, in which men and beasts fought and were tormented and slain. Amphitheatres are the most characteristic of Roman ruins. Life went on in that key. The uneasiness of guys's hearts manifested itself in profound spiritual unrest.

From the times when the Aryan hordes first broke in upon the ancient civilizations, it changed into inevitable that the antique gods of the temples and priesthoods need to suffer exquisite adaptations or disappear. In the direction of masses of generations the rural peoples of the brunette civilizations had formed their lives and thoughts to the temple-centred life. Observances and the fear of disturbed workouts, sacrifices and mysteries, dominated their minds. Their gods seem immense and illogical to our modern-day minds due to the fact we belong to an Aryanized world, however to these older peoples these deities had the immediate conviction and vividness of factors seen in an excessive dream. The conquest of 1 town state via another in Sumeria or early Egypt intended a trade or a renaming of gods or goddesses, however left the shape and spirit of the worship intact. There become no trade in its trendy person. The figures inside the dream modified, however the dream went on and it changed into the same kind of dream. And the early Semitic conquerors were sufficiently akin in spirit to the Sumerians to take over the religion of the Mesopotamian civilization they subjugated without any profound alteration. Egypt became by no means 209certainly subjugated to the volume of a non secular revolution. Under the Ptolemies and beneath the Cæsars, her temples and altars and priesthoods remained essentially Egyptian.

So long as conquests went on between people of comparable social and non secular habits it changed into possible to get over the clash among the god of this temple and area and the god of that by using a method of grouping or assimilation. If the 2 gods have been alike in individual they were recognized. It become absolutely the equal god below another call, said the

priests and the human beings. This fusion of gods is called theocrasia; and the age of the extraordinary conquests of the thousand years B.C. Became an age of theocrasia. Over extensive areas the nearby gods had been displaced by using, or rather they had been swallowed up in, a general god. So that once at final Hebrew prophets in Babylon proclaimed one God of Righteousness in all of the earth men's minds had been completely organized for that concept.

But frequently the gods had been too multiple for such an assimilation, and then they have been grouped together in a few doable courting. A lady god - and the Ægean international earlier than the coming of the Greek turned into an awful lot hooked on Mother Gods—would be married to a male god, and an animal god or a celeb god might be humanized and the animal or astronomical element, the serpent or the solar or the famous person, made into an ornament or a image. Or the god of a defeated human beings might emerge as a malignant antagonist to the brighter gods. The records of theology is full of such diversifications, compromises and rationalizations of once local gods.

As Egypt advanced from metropolis states into one united kingdom there has been a good deal of this theocrasia. The leader god so to speak become Osiris, a sacrificial harvest god of whom Pharaoh become imagined to be the earthly incarnation. Osiris turned into represented as repeatedly loss of life and rising again; he turned into not best the seed and the harvest however additionally with the aid of a natural extension of notion the approach of human immortality. Among his symbols become the extensive-winged scarabeus beetle which buries its eggs to upward push again, and also the effulgent sun which sets to upward thrust. Later on he changed into to be identified with Apis, the sacred bull. Associated with him changed into the goddess Isis. Isis was also Hathor, a cow-goddess, and the crescent moon and the Star of the sea. Osiris dies and she or he bears a child, Horus, who is also a

210hawk-god and the dawn, and who grows to emerge as Osiris once more. The effigies of Isis constitute her as bearing the toddler Horus in her palms and status on the crescent moon. These aren't logical relationships, but they had been devised by using the human mind earlier than the development of hard and systematic thinking and they have a dream-like coherence. Beneath this triple organization there are different and darker Egyptian gods, bad gods, the dog-headed Anubis, black night and so forth, devourers, tempters, enemies of god and guy.

MITHRAS SACRIFICING A BULL, ROMAN

MITHRAS SACRIFICING A BULL, ROMAN

(In the British Museum)

Every religious system does within the path of time in shape itself to the form of the human soul, and there may be no question that out of these illogical or even uncouth symbols, Egyptian human beings have been able to style for themselves methods of real devotion and comfort. The desire for immortality was very robust within the Egyptian thoughts, and the religious life of Egypt grew to become on that preference. The Egyptian 211 faith changed into an immortality faith as no other faith had ever been. As Egypt went down below overseas conquerors and the Egyptian gods ceased to have any great political significance, this craving for a life of compensations right here-after, intensified.

ISIS AND HORUS

ISIS AND HORUS

After the Greek conquest, the new city of Alexandria became the centre of Egyptian non secular lifestyles, and indeed of the religious life of the complete Hellenic global. A notable temple, the Serapeum, become set up with the aid of Ptolemy I at which a type of trinity of gods was worshipped. These have been Serapis (who became Osiris-Apis rechristened), Isis and

Horus. These had been no longer seemed as separate gods but as three aspects of one god, and Serapis changed into diagnosed with the Greek Zeus, the Roman Jupiter and the Persian solar-god. This worship spread wherever the Hellenic have an impact on prolonged, even into North India and Western China. The concept of immortality, an immortality of compensations and consolation, changed into eagerly obtained via a world in which the commonplace life turned into hopelessly wretched. Serapis was called “the saviour of souls.” “After loss of life,” said the hymns of that point, “we’re nonetheless within the care of his windfall.” Isis attracted many devotees. Her photographs stood in her temples, as Queen of Heaven, bearing the toddler Horus in her fingers. Candles were burnt before her, votive services were made to her, shaven clergymen consecrated to celibacy waited on her altar.

The rise of the Roman empire opened the western European world to this growing cult. The temples of Serapis-Isis, the chanting of the clergymen and the hope of immortal lifestyles, observed the Roman standards to Scotland and Holland. But there have been many rivals to the Serapis-Isis religion. Prominent amongst those changed into Mithraism. This changed into a religion of Persian starting place, and it concentrated upon some now forgotten mysteries about Mithras sacrificing a sacred and benevolent bull. Here we appear to have some thing extra primordial than the complicated and complex Serapis-Isis ideals. We are carried returned directly to the blood sacrifices of the heliolithic stage in human tradition. The bull upon the Mithraic monuments usually bleeds copiously from a wound in its facet, and from this blood springs new existence. The votary to Mithraism definitely bathed within the blood of the sacrificial bull. At his initiation he went underneath a scaffolding upon which a bull turned into killed so that the blood should sincerely run down on him.

Both those religions, and the same is actual of many different of the severa parallel cults that sought the allegiance of the slaves and citizens underneath the sooner Roman emperors, are personal religions. They goal at personal salvation and personal immortality. The older religions were not private like that; they were social. The older style of divinity became god or goddess of the town first or of the state, and simplest secondarily of the man or woman. The sacrifices have been a public and no longer a non-public function. They concerned collective realistic needs on this global in which we live. But the Greeks first and now the Romans had pushed faith out of politics. Guided by the Egyptian tradition faith had retreated to the opposite global.

BUST OF THE EMPEROR COMMODUS, <small>A.D.
</small> a hundred and eighty-192

BUST OF THE EMPEROR COMMODUS, A.D. 180-192

Represented because the God Mithras, Roman, Circa A.D.
One hundred ninety

(In the British Museum)

These new non-public immortality religions took all the coronary heart and emotion out of the vintage country religions, however they did not actually update them. A common town beneath the earlier Roman emperors would have some of temples to all forms of gods. There might be a temple to Jupiter of the Capitol, the extraordinary god of Rome, and there would likely be one to the reigning Cæsar. For the Cæsars had learnt from the Pharaohs the possibility of being gods. In such temples a chilly and stately political worship went on; one could cross and make an presenting and burn a pinch of incense to show one's loyalty. But it might be to the temple of Isis, the pricey Queen of Heaven, one could go along with the burthen 213of one's private troubles for advice and relief. There is probably local and kooky gods. Seville, for example, long affected the worship of the vintage Carthaginian Venus. In a cave or an underground temple there

could virtually be an altar to Mithras, attended through legionaries and slaves. And probable also there would be a synagogue in which the Jews accrued to read their Bible and uphold their faith inside the unseen God of all of the Earth.

Sometimes there might be trouble with the Jews about the political side of the state religion. They held that their God became a jealous God illiberal of idolatry, and they might refuse to participate within the public sacrifices to Cæsar. They might no longer even salute the Roman standards for fear of idolatry.

In the East lengthy earlier than the time of Buddha there have been ascetics, ladies and men who gave up maximum of the delights of life, who repudiated marriage and assets and sought religious powers and an escape from the stresses and mortifications of the world in abstinence, ache and solitude. Buddha himself set his face in opposition to ascetic extravagances, but lots of his disciples accompanied a monkish existence of outstanding severity. Obscure Greek cults practised similar disciplines even to the quantity of self-mutilation. Asceticism regarded within the Jewish communities of Judea and Alexandria additionally within the first century B.C. Communities of fellows deserted the world and gave themselves to austerities and mystical contemplation. Such changed into the sect of the Essenes. Throughout the first and second centuries A.D. There was an almost international-huge hotel to such repudiations of lifestyles, a widely wide-spread look for “salvation” from the distresses of the time. The old experience of an established order, the old self assurance in priest and temple and law and custom, had long gone. Amidst the winning slavery, cruelty, fear, tension, waste, display and annoying self-indulgence, went this epidemic of self-disgust and intellectual insecurity, this agonized search for peace even at the rate of renunciation and voluntary struggling. This it became that filled the Serapeum with

weeping penitents and taken the converts into the gloom and gore of the Mithraic cave.

214

XXXVII

THE TEACHING OF JESUS

IT became even as Augustus Cæsar, the primary of the Emperors, became reigning in Rome that Jesus who is the Christ of Christianity turned into born in Judea. In his call a religion turned into to get up which was destined to come to be the reputable faith of the complete Roman Empire.

Now it's miles on the whole extra convenient to maintain history and theology apart. A large percentage of the Christian international believes that Jesus become an incarnation of that God of all of the Earth whom the Jews first recognized. The historian, if he is to remain historian, can neither take delivery of nor deny that interpretation. Materially Jesus appeared within the likeness of a person, and it is as a person that the historian ought to address him.

He appeared in Judea inside the reign of Tiberius Cæsar. He turned into a prophet. He preached after the fashion of the preceding Jewish prophets. He become a man of about thirty, and we're within the profoundest ignorance of his way of existence earlier than his preaching commenced.

Our most effective direct assets of facts about the lifestyles and teaching of Jesus are the four Gospels. All 4 agree in giving us a image of a completely particular character. One is

obliged to say, “Here became a man. This could not have been invented.”

But just because the personality of Gautama Buddha has been distorted and obscured by the stiff squatting figure, the gilded idol of later Buddhism, so one feels that the tilt and strenuous persona of Jesus is a good deal wronged by the unreality and conventionality that an incorrect reverence has imposed upon his parent in current Christian artwork. Jesus turned into a penniless teacher, who wandered about the dusty sun-bit usa of Judea, dwelling upon informal gifts of food; but he is usually represented clean, combed and glossy, in spotless raiment, erect and with some thing immobile approximately him as even though ²¹he became gliding through the air. This by myself has made him unreal and brilliant to many people who can not distinguish the core of the story from the decorative and unwise additions of the unintelligently devout.

We are left, if we do strip this record of these difficult add-ons, with the parent of a being, very human, very earnest and passionate, able to fast anger, and teaching a brand new and easy and profound doctrine—particularly, the regularly occurring loving Fatherhood of God and the coming of the Kingdom of Heaven. He was sincerely a person—to apply a common phrase—of excessive non-public magnetism. He attracted fans and stuffed them with love and courage. Weak and ailing human beings were heartened and healed by using his presence. Yet he become possibly of a delicate physique, due to the swiftness with which he died under the rigors of crucifixion. There is a subculture that he fainted when, in keeping with the custom, he became made to bear his pass to the place of execution. He went about the united states for three years spreading his doctrine after which he got here to Jerusalem and changed into accused of trying to installation a ordinary nation in Judea; he become tried upon this fee, and crucified together with two thieves. Long before those had been lifeless his sufferings were over.

The doctrine of the Kingdom of Heaven, which was the principle coaching of Jesus, is simply one of the most progressive doctrines that ever stirred and modified human notion. It is small wonder if the sector of that time failed to hold close its complete significance, and recoiled in dismay from even a half of apprehension of its exquisite demanding situations to the hooked up conduct and establishments of mankind. For the doctrine of the Kingdom of Heaven, as Jesus seems to have preached it, turned into no much less than a ambitious and uncompromising demand for a complete alternate and cleaning of the lifestyles of our struggling race, an utter cleansing, with out and within. To the gospels the reader ought to cross for all that is preserved of this notable coaching; right here we are most effective involved with the jar of its effect upon hooked up ideas.

The Jews were persuaded that God, the only God of the whole world, turned into a righteous god, however they also notion of him as a trading god who had made a good buy with their Father Abraham 216approximately them, a superb bargain certainly for them, to bring them at last to predominance within the earth. With dismay and anger they heard Jesus sweeping away their expensive securities. God, he taught, turned into no bargainer; there have been no selected human beings and no favourites inside the Kingdom of Heaven. God turned into the loving father of all life, as incapable of displaying favour as the well-known solar. And all guys had been brothers—sinners alike and cherished sons alike—of this divine father. In the parable of the Good Samaritan Jesus forged scorn upon that herbal tendency we all obey, to glorify our personal humans and to reduce the righteousness of other creeds and different races. In the parable of the labourers he thrust aside the obstinate claim of the Jews to have a unique claim upon God. All whom God takes into the dominion, he taught, God serves alike; there's no difference in his treatment, because there's no degree to his bounty. From all furthermore,

as the parable of the buried skills witnesses, and as the incident of the widow's mite enforces, he demands the maximum. There aren't any privileges, no rebates and no excuses in the Kingdom of Heaven.

EARLY IDEAL PORTRAIT, IN GILDED GLASS, OF
JESUS CHRIST IN

WHICH THE TRADITIONAL BEARD IS NOT SHOWN

EARLY IDEAL PORTRAIT, IN GILDED GLASS, OF
JESUS CHRIST IN WHICH THE TRADITIONAL BEARD
IS NOT SHOWN

217But it isn't best the extreme tribal patriotism of the Jews that Jesus outraged. They had been a human beings of severe circle of relatives loyalty, and he might have swept away all of the narrow and restrictive circle of relatives affections inside the incredible flood of the affection of God. The entire kingdom of Heaven become to be the circle of relatives of his followers. We are told that, "While he but talked to the human beings, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him. Then one stated unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, wanting to speak with thee. But he spoke back and said unto him that instructed him, Who is my mom? And who're my brethren? And he stretched forth his fingers towards his disciples, and stated, Behold my mom and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the need of my Father that is in heaven, the equal is my brother, and sister, and mother.? [1]

THE ROAD FROM NAZARETH TO TIBERIAS

THE ROAD FROM NAZARETH TO TIBERIAS

Photo: Fannaway

And not best did Jesus strike at patriotism and the bonds of own family loyalty within the call of God's universal fatherhood and brotherhood of all mankind, however it is clear

that his teaching condemned all the gradations of the financial machine, all personal wealth, and 218 private blessings. All guys belonged to the kingdom; all their possessions belonged to the dominion; the righteous lifestyles for all guys, the best righteous lifestyles, become the provider of God's will with all that we had, with all that we have been. Again and again he denounced non-public riches and the reservation of any non-public existence.

DAVID'S TOWER AND WALL OF JERUSALEM

DAVID'S TOWER AND WALL OF JERUSALEM

Photo: Fannaway

“And when he changed into long gone forth into the way, there came one walking, and kneeled to him, and requested him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may also inherit everlasting life? And Jesus said to him, Why callest thou me desirable? There may be none excellent but one, that is God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do now not commit adultery, Do no longer kill, Do no longer steal, Do now not bear fake witness, Defraud now not, Honour thy father and mother. And he responded and stated unto him, Master, all these items have I located from my youth. Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and stated unto him, One issue thou lackest; move thy manner, sell in any way thou hast, and provide to the bad, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, take in the go, and comply with me. And he become sad at that pronouncing, and went away grieved; for he had superb possessions.

219

A STREET IN JERUSALEM

A STREET IN JERUSALEM

Along any such thoroughfare Christ carried his pass to the location of execution

Photo: Fannaway

“And Jesus regarded round approximately, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches input into the Kingdom of God! And the disciples had been astonished at his words. But Jesus spoke back again, and saith unto them, Children, how tough is it for them that believe in riches to go into into the Kingdom of God! It is 220simpler for a camel to undergo the eye of a needle, than for a wealthy guy to go into into the Kingdom of God.” [2]

Moreover, in his notable prophecy of this nation which became to make all guys one collectively in God, Jesus had small persistence for the bargaining righteousness of formal faith. Another huge a part of his recorded utterances is aimed towards the meticulous observance of the regulations of the pious career. “Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples in line with the lifestyle of the elders, however consume bread with unwashen palms? He answered and stated unto them, Well hath Isaiah prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written,

“This people honoureth me with their lips,

“But their heart is far from me.

“Howbeit in vain do they worship me,

“Teaching for doctrines the commandments of fellows.

“For laying apart the commandment of God, ye hold the culture of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many different such things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well

ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your personal way of life.” [3]

It became no longer merely an ethical and a social revolution that Jesus proclaimed; it's far clear from a score of warning signs that his coaching had a political bent of the plainest type. It is actual that he said his nation become not of this international, that it changed into within the hearts of men and not upon a throne; however it's miles equally clean that anywhere and in what measure his nation become set up inside the hearts of guys, the outer global could be in that degree revolutionized and made new.

Whatever else the deafness and blindness of his hearers can also have missed in his utterances, it's miles simple they did now not omit his solve to revolutionize the arena. The entire tenor of the competition to him and the instances of his trial and execution show truly that to his contemporaries he appeared to advise evidently, and did propose it appears that evidently, to alternate and fuse and expand all human existence.

In view of what he evidently stated, is it any wonder that all who had been wealthy and rich felt a horror of weird matters, a swimming of their global at his coaching? He turned into dragging out all the little personal reservations that they had crafted from social carrier into the light 221 of a common spiritual lifestyles. He became like a few terrible ethical huntsman digging mankind out of the cushty burrows in which they'd lived hitherto. In the white blaze of this nation of his there was to be no belongings, no privilege, no delight and priority; no purpose certainly and no praise but love. Is it any surprise that guys were dazzled and blinded and cried out towards him? Even his disciples cried out whilst he could no longer spare them the light. Is it any wonder that the priests found out that among this guy and themselves there has been

no preference but that he or priestcraft should perish? Is it any wonder that the Roman soldiers, faced and surprised via something hovering over their comprehension and threatening all their disciplines, ought to take safe haven in wild laughter, and crown him with thorns and robe him in purple and make a ridicule Cæsar of him? For to take him severely became to go into upon a ordinary and alarming life, to abandon habits, to manipulate instincts and impulses, to essay an remarkable happiness... .

[1] Matt. Xii, 46-50.

[2] Mark x, 17-25.

[3] Mark vii, 1-9.

222

XXXVIII

THE DEVELOPMENT OF DOCTRINAL CHRISTIANITY

IN the 4 gospels we discover the character and teachings of Jesus but very little of the dogmas of the Christian church. It is inside the epistles, a chain of writings with the aid of the instant fans of Jesus, that the huge traces of Christian belief are laid down.

Chief among the makers of Christian doctrine became St. Paul. He had in no way seen Jesus nor heard him pontificate. Paul's name become firstly Saul, and he became conspicuous at the start as an lively persecutor of the little band of disciples after

the crucifixion. Then he became converted to Christianity, and he changed his name to Paul. He turned into a man of super intellectual energy and deeply and passionately interested in the non secular actions of the time. He changed into well versed in Judaism and within the Mithraism and Alexandrian faith of the day. He carried over many of their ideas and phrases of expression into Christianity. He did very little to amplify or broaden the original teaching of Jesus, the coaching of the Kingdom of Heaven. But he taught that Jesus changed into not only the promised Christ, the promised leader of the Jews, but additionally that his loss of life became a sacrifice, like the deaths of the historic sacrificial victims of the primordial civilizations, for the redemption of mankind.

When religions flourish aspect by using facet they have a tendency to choose up every other's ceremonial and different outward peculiarities. Buddhism, for instance, in China has now almost the same type of temples and clergymen and uses as Taoism, which follows within the teachings of Lao Tse. Yet the original teachings of Buddhism and Taoism have been nearly flatly hostile. And it reflects no question or discredit upon the necessities of Christian coaching that it took over no longer simply such formal matters because the shaven priest, the votive providing, the altars, candles, chanting and photographs of the Alexandrian and Mithraic faiths, however adopted even their devotional terms and their theological 223ideas. All these religions had been flourishing facet by means of facet with many less outstanding cults. Each became searching for adherents, and there must were a steady going and coming of converts between them. Sometimes one or other might be in favour with the authorities. But Christianity turned into regarded with more suspicion than its opponents because, just like the Jews, its adherents would no longer perform acts of worship to the God Cæsar. This made it a seditious faith, pretty other than the modern spirit of the lessons of Jesus himself.

MOSAIC OF SS. PETER AND PAUL POINTING TO A THRONE, ON GOLD

BACKGROUND

MOSAIC OF SS. PETER AND PAUL POINTING TO A THRONE, ON GOLD BACKGROUND

From the Ninth Century unique, inside the Church of Sta. Prassede, Rome

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

St. Paul familiarized his disciples with the idea that Jesus, like 224Osiris, become a god who died to rise again and deliver men immortality. And currently the spreading Christian network turned into substantially torn with the aid of complex theological disputes about the connection of this God Jesus to God the Father of Mankind. The Arians taught that Jesus become divine, but distant from and not as good as the Father. The Sabellians taught that Jesus was merely an element of the Father, and that God was Jesus and Father on the equal time just as a man can be a father and an artificer at the identical time; and the Trinitarians taught a extra subtle doctrine that God became both one and 3, Father, Son and Holy Spirit. For a time it appeared that Arianism could be successful over its competitors, after which after disputes, violence and wars, the Trinitarian method have become the normal formula of all Christendom. It can be found in its completest expression in the Athanasian Creed.

We offer no touch upon these controversies right here. They do now not sway records as the private teaching of Jesus sways records. The private coaching of Jesus does seem to mark a brand new segment within the moral and non secular existence of our race. Its insistence upon the ordinary Fatherhood of God and the implicit brotherhood of all men, its insistence upon the sacredness of every human character as a residing temple of God, become to have the profoundest impact upon all of the subsequent social and political life of

mankind. With Christianity, with the spreading teachings of Jesus, a brand new respect seems in the global for man as man. It can be real, as antagonistic critics of Christianity have entreated, that St. Paul preached obedience to slaves, but it's far similarly proper that the whole spirit of the teachings of Jesus preserved within the gospels changed into against the subjugation of guy by way of man. And nonetheless greater exceptionally became Christianity against such outrages upon human dignity as the gladiatorial combats within the area.

THE BAPTISM OF CHRIST

THE BAPTISM OF CHRIST

(Sixth Century Ivory Panel inside the British Museum)

Throughout the first centuries after Christ, the Christian religion unfold throughout the Roman Empire, weaving collectively an ever-growing multitude of converts into a new network of thoughts and could. The mind-set of the emperors varied among hostility and toleration. There have been tries to suppress this new faith in both the second one and 0.33 centuries; and in the end in 303 and the following years a remarkable persecution below the Emperor Diocletian. The giant accumulations of Church assets have been 225seized, all bibles and non secular writings have been confiscated and destroyed, Christians were placed out of the safety of the law and many executed. The destruction of the books is especially fantastic. It shows how the energy of the written word in maintaining collectively 226the new religion changed into liked by the government. These "book religions," Christianity and Judaism, have been religions that knowledgeable. Their persisted existence depended very in large part on humans being capable of study and apprehend their doctrinal thoughts. The older religions had made no such enchantment to the private intelligence. In the a long time of barbaric confusion that have been now at hand in western Europe it become the Christian church that turned into particularly instrumental in retaining the subculture of gaining knowledge of.

The persecution of Diocletian failed absolutely to suppress the developing Christian network. In many provinces it became useless because the bulk of the populace and some of the officials were Christian. In 317 an edict of toleration was issued through the related Emperor Galerius, and in 324 Constantine the Great, a convert and on his deathbed a baptized convert to Christianity, became sole ruler of the Roman world. He deserted all divine pretensions and placed Christian symbols at the shields and banners of his troops.

In some years Christianity changed into securely installed as the professional faith of the empire. The competing religions disappeared or were absorbed with splendid celerity, and in 390 Theodosius the Great precipitated the outstanding statue of Jupiter Serapis at Alexandria to be destroyed. From the outset of the 5th century onward the handiest clergymen or temples within the Roman Empire had been Christian priests and temples.

227

XXXIX

THE BARBARIANS BREAK THE EMPIRE INTO EAST AND WEST

THROUGHOUT the 1/3 century the Roman Empire, decaying socially and disintegrating morally, confronted the barbarians. The emperors of this period have been fighting army autocrats, and the capital of the empire shifted with the necessities in their navy coverage. Now the imperial headquarters would be at Milan in north Italy, now in what's now Serbia at Sirmium or Nish, now in Nicomedia in Asia Minor. Rome midway down Italy was too some distance from the centre of hobby to

be a handy imperial seat. It changed into a declining city. Over most of the empire peace still prevailed and men went approximately without palms. The armies continued to be the sole repositories of energy; the emperors, depending on their legions, have become increasingly more autocratic to the rest of the empire and their country increasingly like that of the Persian and other oriental monarchs. Diocletian assumed a royal diadem and oriental robes.

All alongside the imperial frontier, which ran kind of along the Rhine and Danube, enemies had been now urgent. The Franks and different German tribes had come up to the Rhine. In north Hungary have been the Vandals; in what was as soon as Dacia and is now Roumania, the Visigoths or West Goths. Behind these in south Russia had been the East Goths or Ostrogoths, and past those once more within the Volga region the Alans. But now Mongolian peoples have been forcing their manner in the direction of Europe. The Huns had been already exacting tribute from the Alans and Ostrogoths and pushing them to the west.

In Asia the Roman frontiers have been crumbling returned beneath the rush of a renaissant Persia. This new Persia, the Persia of the Sassanid kings, changed into to be a full of life and on the entire a a hit rival of the Roman Empire in Asia for the subsequent three centuries.

A glance at the map of Europe will show the reader the abnormal weak point of the empire. The river Danube comes down to inside 228 a couple of hundred miles of the Adriatic Sea inside the area of what's now Bosnia and Serbia. It makes a rectangular re-entrant perspective there. The Romans in no way saved their sea communications in precise order, and this two hundred mile strip of land turned into their line of communication between the western Latin-speaking part of the empire and the jap Greek-speaking element. Against this

rectangular angle of the Danube the barbarian stress was best. When they broke thru there it became inevitable that the empire have to fall into components.

Map: The Empire and the Barbarians

A extra energetic empire would possibly have thrust forward and reconquered Dacia, but the Roman Empire lacked any such vigour. Constantine the Great became simply a monarch of notable devotion and intelligence. He thrust back a raid of the Goths from simply these vital Balkan regions, but he had no pressure to hold the frontier throughout the Danube. He turned into too pre-thinking about the inner weaknesses of the empire. He delivered the unity and ethical force of Christianity to restore the spirit of the declining empire, and he determined to create a new everlasting capital at Byzantium upon the Hellespont. This new-made Byzantium, which was re-christened Constantinople in his honour, became nevertheless building when he died. Towards the stop of his reign occurred a super transaction. The 229 Vandals, being pressed by the Goths, asked to be acquired into the Roman Empire. They have been assigned lands in Pannonia, that's now that part of Hungary west of the Danube, and their combating men have become nominally legionaries. But those new legionaries remained under their personal chiefs. Rome didn't digest them.

Constantine died working to reorganize his exceptional realm, and soon the frontiers have been ruptured once more and the Visigoths got here nearly to Constantinople. They defeated the Emperor Valens at Adrianople and made an agreement in what's now Bulgaria, just like the agreement of the Vandals in Pannonia. Nominally they have been topics of the emperor, nearly they had been conquerors.

CONSTANTINE'S PILLAR, CONSTANTINOPLE

CONSTANTINE'S PILLAR, CONSTANTINOPLE

Photo: Sebah & Foailier

From 379 to 395 A.D. Reigned the Emperor Theodosius the Great, and while he reigned the empire turned into still formally intact. Over the armies of Italy and Pannonia presided Stilicho, a Vandal, over the armies in the Balkan peninsula, Alaric, a Goth. When Theodosius died at the near of the fourth century he left two sons. Alaric supported this kind of, Arcadius, in Constantinople, and Stilicho the other, Honorius, in Italy. In other words Alaric and Stilicho fought for the empire with the princes as puppets. In the path in their warfare Alaric marched into Italy and after a brief siege took Rome (410 A.D.).

The establishing 1/2 of the 5th century saw the whole of the Roman Empire in Europe the prey of robber armies of barbarians. It is hard to visualise the state of affairs inside the global at that time. Over France, Spain, Italy and the Balkan peninsula, the top notch cities that had flourished beneath the early empire nevertheless stood, impoverished, partly depopulated and falling into decay. Life in them must have been shallow, imply and full of uncertainty. Local officials asserted their authority and went on with their work with such conscience as that they had, no question in the call of a now far flung and inaccessible emperor. The church buildings went on, however generally with illiterate clergymen. There turned into little analyzing and plenty superstition and fear. But everywhere except where looters had destroyed them, books and images and statuary and such-like works of art were nevertheless to be determined.

The existence of the nation-state had also degenerated. Everywhere this Roman world become lots extra weedy and untidy than it were. In a few regions battle and pestilence had added the land all the way down to the level of a waste. Roads and forests had been infested with robbers. Into such regions

the barbarians marched, with little or no competition, and installation their chiefs as rulers, often with Roman respectable titles. If they have been 1/2 civilized barbarians they could deliver the conquered districts tolerable terms, they could take possession of the towns, associate and intermarry, and accumulate (with an accessory) the Latin speech; but the Jutes, the Angles and Saxons who submerged the Roman province of Britain had been agriculturalists and had little need for cities, they seem to have swept south Britain clear of the Romanized populace and they replaced the language with the aid of their personal Teutonic dialects, which became at ultimate English.

231

BASE OF THE “OBELISK OF THEODOSIUS,”

CONSTANTINOPLE

BASE OF THE “OBELISK OF THEODOSIUS,”

CONSTANTINOPLE

The obelisk of Thothmes, taken from Egypt to Constantinople by means of Theodosius and placed upon the pedestal her shown; an interesting example of early Byzantine art. The whole obelisk is visible on web page 239.

Photo: Sebah & Foailier

It is impossible inside the space at our disposal to trace the actions of all the numerous German and Slavonic tribes as they went back and forth in the disorganized empire looking for plunder and a pleasant domestic. But let the Vandals serve as an example. They got here into 232history in east Germany. They settled as we've got informed in Pannonia. Thence they moved somewhen approximately 425 A.D. Thru the intervening provinces to Spain. There they observed Visigoths from South Russia and other German tribes setting up dukes and kings. From Spain the Vandals under Genseric sailed for North Africa (429), captured Carthage (439), and built a fleet. They secured the mastery of the sea and captured and pillaged Rome (455), which had recovered very imperfectly from her

capture and looting via Alaric half of a century in advance. Then the Vandals made themselves masters of Sicily, Corsica, Sardinia and most of the opposite islands of the western Mediterranean. They made, in fact, a sea empire very similar in its extent to the sea empire of Carthage seven-hundred ordinary years earlier than. They had been at the climax of their electricity about 477. They were a mere handful of conquerors protecting all this united states of america. In the following century almost all their territory have been reconquered for the empire of Constantinople in the course of a transitory blaze of power underneath Justinian I.

The story of the Vandals is however one sample of a bunch of similar adventures. But now there was entering the European global the least kindred and most redoubtable of a lot of these devastators, the Mongolian Huns or Tartars, a yellow people active and in a position, which includes the western international had never earlier than encountered.

233

XL

THE HUNS AND THE END OF THE WESTERN EMPIRE

THIS look of a conquering Mongolian people in Europe may be taken to mark a new degree in human history. Until the closing century or so before the Christian generation, the Mongol and the Nordic peoples had not been in close contact. Far away in the frozen lands beyond the northern forests the Lapps, a Mongolian people, had drifted westward as a long way as Lapland, however they performed no part in the foremost contemporary of records. For thousands of years the western global carried on the dramatic interplay of the Aryan, Semitic and fundamental brunette peoples with very little interference (besides for an Ethiopian invasion of Egypt or so)

either from the black peoples to the south or from the Mongolian international within the a long way East.

It is probable that there have been two leader reasons for the new westward waft of the nomadic Mongolians. One changed into the consolidation of the high-quality empire of China, its extension northward and the increase of its populace at some point of the prosperous period of the Han dynasty. The different became some process of climatic alternate; a lesser rainfall that abolished swamps and forests perhaps, or a extra rainfall that prolonged grazing over barren region steppes, or maybe possibly each those procedures going on in exceptional areas but which anyways facilitated a westward migration. A third contributory purpose changed into the financial wretchedness, internal decay and falling populace of the Roman Empire. The wealthy men of the later Roman Republic, after which the tax-gatherers of the military emperors had fully ate up its vitality. So we've got the factors of thrust, approach and opportunity. There turned into strain from the east, rot inside the west and an open street.

The Hun had reached the eastern barriers of European Russia through the primary century A.D., but it turned into not until the fourth and 234fifth centuries A.D. That those horsemen rose to predominance upon the steppes. The 5th century become the Hun's century. The first Huns to come back into Italy have been mercenary bands within the pay of Stilicho the Vandal, the master of Honorius. Presently they had been in ownership of Pannonia, the empty nest of the Vandals.

By the second sector of the fifth century a amazing battle leader had arisen the various Huns, Attila. We have most effective indistinct and tantalizing glimpses of his energy. He ruled no longer handiest over the Huns but over a conglomerate of tributary Germanic tribes; his empire prolonged from the Rhine pass the plains into Central Asia. He

exchanged ambassadors with China. His head camp became in the plain of Hungary east of the Danube. There he became visited with the aid of an envoy from Constantinople, Priscus, who has left us an account of his kingdom. The way of living of these Mongols became very like the manner of residing of the primitive Aryans they had replaced. The not unusual folk have been in huts and tents; the chiefs lived in super stockaded wooden halls. There were feasts and drinking and singing by the bards. The Homeric heroes or even the Macedonian companions of Alexander might likely have felt extra at home inside the camp-capital of Attila than they might have accomplished inside the cultivated and decadent court docket of Theodosius II, the son of Arcadius, who changed into then reigning in Constantinople.

For a time it regarded as although the nomads below the management of the Huns and Attila would play the equal element closer to the Græco-Roman civilization of the Mediterranean nations that the barbaric Greeks had performed lengthy in the past to the Ægean civilization. It looked like history repeating itself upon a larger stage. But the Huns have been plenty extra wedded to the nomadic life than the early Greeks, who were alternatively migratory livestock farmers than actual nomads. The Huns raided and plundered however did not settle.

For a few years Attila bullied Theodosius as he chose. His armies devastated and looted right all the way down to the partitions of Constantinople, Gibbon says that he totally destroyed no less than seventy cities in the Balkan peninsula, and Theodosius offered him off by way of payments of tribute and tried to eliminate him for right by means of sending mystery retailers to assassinate him. In 451 Attila grew to become his attention to the remains of the Latin- speakme half of the empire and invaded 235Gaul. Nearly each metropolis in northern Gaul turned into sacked. Franks, Visigoths and the imperial forces united towards him and he turned into defeated

at Troyes in a vast dispersed warfare wherein a large number of fellows, variously expected as among a hundred and fifty,000 and three hundred,000, had been killed. This checked him in Gaul, however it did now not exhaust his sizeable army resources. Next 12 months he got here into Italy by way of manner of Venetia, burnt Aquileia and Padua and looted Milan.

HEAD OF BARBARIAN CHIEF

HEAD OF BARBARIAN CHIEF

(In the British Museum)

Numbers of fugitives from these north Italian towns and particularly from Padua fled to islands within the lagoons at the head of the Adriatic and laid there the foundations of the metropolis nation of Venice, which changed into to become one of the best or the buying and selling centres within the middle a long time.

In 453 Attila died unexpectedly after a excellent ceremonial dinner to have fun his marriage to a younger lady, and at his dying this plunder confederation of his fell to portions. The actual Huns disappear from history, combined into the encompassing extra severa Aryan-speakme populations. 236But these first-rate Hun raids nearly consummated the give up of the Latin Roman Empire. After his dying ten distinctive emperors ruled in Rome in two decades, set up by means of Vandal and other mercenary troops. The Vandals from Carthage took and sacked Rome in 455. Finally in 476 Odoacer, the chief of the barbarian troops, suppressed a Pannonian who was figuring as emperor under the extraordinary call of Romulus Augustulus, and knowledgeable the Court of Constantinople that there was no longer an emperor within the west. So ingloriously the Latin Roman Empire came to an end. In 493 Theodoric the Goth became King of Rome.

All over western and central Europe now barbarian chiefs had been reigning as kings, dukes and so on, almost independent however for the most element professing a few type of shadowy allegiance to the emperor. There have been hundreds and perhaps hundreds of such practically impartial brigand rulers. In Gaul, Spain and Italy and in Dacia the Latin speech nevertheless prevailed in locally distorted bureaucracy, however in Britain and east of the Rhine languages of the German group (or in Bohemia a Slavonic language, Czech) were the commonplace speech. The superior clergy and a small remnant of other educated guys study and wrote Latin. Everywhere existence became insecure and property turned into held through the robust arm. Castles elevated and roads fell into decay. The dawn of the sixth century turned into an age of department and of intellectual darkness all through the western international. Had it no longer been for the clergymen and Christian missionaries Latin gaining knowledge of may have perished altogether.

Why had the Roman Empire grown and why had it so completely decayed? It grew due to the fact at first the idea of citizenship held it together. Throughout the times of the expanding republic, or even into the times of the early empire there remained an exquisite quantity of men conscious of Roman citizenship, feeling it a privilege and an obligation to be a Roman citizen, confident of their rights under the Roman regulation and inclined to make sacrifices within the call of Rome. The prestige of Rome as of something simply and first-rate and law-upholding spread a ways past the Roman barriers. But at the same time as early because the Punic wars the experience of citizenship was being undermined by using the increase of wealth and slavery. Citizenship unfold indeed however now not the idea of citizenship.

237The Roman Empire changed into in the end a completely primitive employer; it did now not educate, did now not provide an explanation for itself to its increasing multitudes of residents, did no longer invite their co-operation in its selections. There turned into no network of faculties to make certain a commonplace understanding, no distribution of news to maintain collective hobby. The adventurers who struggled for strength from the days of Marius and Sulla onward had no idea of creating and calling in public opinion upon the imperial affairs. The spirit of citizenship died of hunger and no person determined it die. All empires, all states, all companies of human society are, in the closing, things of know-how and will. There remained no will for the Roman Empire inside the World and so it came to an cease.

But even though the Latin-speakme Roman Empire died in the fifth century, something else were born within it that turned into to avail itself particularly of its prestige and tradition, and that changed into the Latin-speaking half of the Catholic Church. This lived whilst the empire died as it appealed to the minds and wills of guys, because it had books and a first rate system of teachers and missionaries to preserve it collectively, matters stronger than any law or legions. Throughout the fourth and 5th centuries A.D. While the empire changed into decaying, Christianity turned into spreading to a ordinary dominion in Europe. It conquered its conquerors, the barbarians. When Attila appeared disposed to march on Rome, the patriarch of Rome intercepted him and did what no armies should do, turning him again through sheer moral force.

The Patriarch or Pope of Rome claimed to be the pinnacle of the entire Christian church. Now that there had been no greater emperors, he commenced to annex imperial titles and claims. He took the title of pontifex maximus, head sacrificial priest of the Roman dominion, the maximum historic of all of the titles that the emperors had enjoyed.

XLI

THE BYZANTINE AND SASSANID EMPIRES

THE Greek-speaking eastern half of the Roman Empire showed plenty more political tenacity than the western half. It weathered the failures of the 5th century A.D., which noticed a whole and final breaking up of the unique Latin Roman energy. Attila bullied the Emperor Theodosius II and sacked and raided nearly to the walls of Constantinople, however that town remained intact. The Nubians got here down the Nile and looted Upper Egypt, but Lower Egypt and Alexandria had been left nonetheless fairly prosperous. Most of Asia Minor became held in opposition to the Sassanid Persians.

The sixth century, which turned into an age of whole darkness for the West, saw certainly a big revival of the Greek power. Justinian I (527-565) was a ruler of very superb ambition and power, and he changed into married to the Empress Theodora, a female of quite same potential who had started life as an actress. Justinian reconquered North Africa from the Vandals and most of Italy from the Goths. He even regained the south of Spain. He did no longer restrict his energies to naval and army establishments. He based a college, built the high-quality church of Sta. Sophia in Constantinople and codified the Roman regulation. But for you to ruin a rival to his college basis he closed the colleges of philosophy in Athens, which had been happening in unbroken continuity from the times of Plato, this is to mention for nearly 1000 years.

From the 0.33 century onwards the Persian Empire have been the steadfast rival of the Byzantine. The empires saved Asia

Minor, Syria and Egypt in a state of perpetual unrest and waste. In the primary century A.D., these lands have been still at a excessive stage of civilization, wealthy and with an abundant population, but the persistent coming and going of armies, massacres, looting and conflict taxation wore them down progressively until simplest shattered and ruinous 239 cities remained upon a countryside of scattered peasants. In this depression method of impoverishment and sickness decrease Egypt fared possibly much less badly than the rest of the sector. Alexandria, like Constantinople, continued a dwindling change between the east and the west.

THE CHURCH (NOW A MOSQUE) OF S. SOPHIA,
CONSTANTINOPLE

THE CHURCH (NOW A MOSQUE) OF S. SOPHIA,
CONSTANTINOPLE

The obelisk of Theodosius in inside the foreground statue on left

Photo: Sebah & Foailier

Science and political philosophy seemed lifeless now in both those warring and decaying empires. The final philosophers of Athens, till their suppression, preserved the texts of the extraordinary literature of the beyond with an infinite reverence and need of know-how. But there remained no elegance of men inside the world, no unfastened gents with formidable and impartial behavior of concept, to carry on the lifestyle of frank assertion and enquiry embodied in these writings. The social and political chaos bills largely for the disappearance of this magnificence, but there was additionally some other cause why the human intelligence turned into sterile and feverish during this age. In both Persia and Byzantium it became all age of intolerance. Both empires have been non secular empires in a brand new way, in a way that greatly hampered the unfastened sports of the human mind.

THE MAGNIFICENT ROOF-WORK IN S. SOPHIA

THE MAGNIFICENT ROOF-WORK IN S. SOPHIA

Photo: Sebah & Foailier

240Of direction the oldest empires within the global had been spiritual empires, centring upon the worship of a god or of a god-king. Alexander changed into dealt with as a divinity and the Cæsars were gods in a lot as they had altars and temples devoted to them and the providing of incense turned into made a take a look at of loyalty to the Roman state. But those older religions have been essentially religions of act and reality.

They did no longer invade the mind. If a man offered his sacrifice and bowed to the god, he changed into left no longer most effective to think but to mention practically something he preferred approximately the affair. But the brand new type of religions that had come into the world, and particularly Christianity, became inward. These new faiths demanded no longer certainly conformity but information perception.

Naturally fierce controversy ensued upon the precise which means of the things believed. These new religions were creed religions. The world become confronted with a new word, Orthodoxy, and with a stern resolve to hold not most effective acts however speech 241and personal concept in the limits of a hard and fast coaching. For to preserve a incorrect opinion, an awful lot more to carry it to other human beings, became no longer seemed as an intellectual disorder but a ethical fault that could condemn a soul to everlasting destruction.

THE RAVENNA PANEL, DEPICTING JUSTINIAN AND HIS COURT

THE RAVENNA PANEL, DEPICTING JUSTINIAN AND HIS COURT

Photo: Alinari

242

THE ROCK HEWN TEMPLE AT PETRA

THE ROCK HEWN TEMPLE AT PETRA

Photo: Underwood & Underwood

Both Ardashir I who founded the Sassanid dynasty in the third century A.D., and Constantine the Great who reconstructed the Roman Empire in the fourth, turned to religious companies for assist, because in these groups they noticed a new manner of using and controlling the wills of fellows. And already before the stop of the fourth century each empires have been persecuting unfastened speak and religious innovation. In Persia Ardashir located the ancient Persian faith of Zoroaster (or Zarathushtra) with its monks and temples and a sacred fireplace that burnt upon its altars, equipped for his cause as a nation religion. Before the cease of the 1/3 century Zoroastrianism was persecuting Christianity, and in 277 A.D. Mani, the founder of 243a new faith, the Manichæans, became crucified and his frame flayed. Constantinople, on its aspect, was busy hunting out Christian heresies. Manichæan thoughts infected Christianity and needed to be fought with the fiercest methods; in go back ideas from Christianity affected the purity of the Zoroastrian doctrine. All ideas have become suspect. Science, which demands earlier than all things the free movement of an untroubled mind, suffered a entire eclipse throughout this segment of intolerance.

War, the bitterest theology, and the standard vices of mankind constituted Byzantine lifestyles of these days. It was picturesque, it became romantic; it had little sweetness or light. When Byzantium and Persia had been not preventing the barbarians from the north, they wasted Asia Minor and Syria in dreary and destructive hostilities. Even in close alliance these two empires might have located it a difficult mission to turn again the barbarians and recover their prosperity. The Turks or Tartars first come into history because the allies first of 1 power and then of every other. In the 6th century the 2 chief antagonists had been Justinian and Chosroes I; within the commencing of the 7th the Emperor Heraclius was pitted towards Chosroes II (580).

At first and until after Heraclius had turned out to be Emperor (610) Chosroes II carried all earlier than him. He took Antioch, Damascus and Jerusalem and his armies reached Chalcedon, that's in Asia Minor over in opposition to Constantinople. In 619 he conquered Egypt. Then Heraclius pressed a counter assault home and routed a Persian navy at Nineveh (627), despite the fact that at that point there had been nonetheless Persian troops at Chalcedon. In 628 Chosroes II changed into deposed and murdered by way of his son, Kavadh, and an inconclusive peace became made among the 2 exhausted empires.

Byzantium and Persia had fought their remaining battle. But few human beings as yet dreamt of the hurricane that turned into even then amassing within the deserts to place an give up for ever to this aimless, chronic conflict.

While Heraclius became restoring order in Syria a message reached him. It had been introduced in to the imperial outpost at Bostra south of Damascus; it became in Arabic, an difficult to understand Semitic wilderness language, and it changed into read to the Emperor, if it reached him at all, by an interpreter. It came from someone who known as himself "Muhammad the Prophet of God." It referred to as upon the Emperor to acknowledge the One True God and to serve him. What the Emperor stated is not recorded.

A comparable message got here to Kavadh at Ctesiphon. He became annoyed, tore up the letter, and bade the messenger begone.

This Muhammad, it seemed, turned into a Bedouin leader whose headquarters have been within the suggest little

wasteland metropolis of Medina. He turned into preaching a new religion of faith within the One True God.

“Even so, O Lord!” he stated; “rend thou his Kingdom from Kavadh.”

245

XLII

THE DYNASTIES OF SUY AND TANG IN CHINA

THROUGHOUT the 5th, 6th, seventh and 8th centuries, there was a steady glide of Mongolian peoples westward. The Huns of Attila were simply precursors of this increase, which led at remaining to the establishment of Mongolian peoples in Finland, Esthonia, Hungary and Bulgaria, in which their descendants, speakme languages similar to Turkish, live to tell the tale to at the moment. The Mongolian nomads had been, in fact, playing a position in the direction of the Aryanized civilizations of Europe and Persia and India that the Aryans had performed to the Ægean and Semitic civilizations ten or fifteen centuries earlier than.

In Central Asia the Turkish peoples had taken root in what's now Western Turkestan, and Persia already hired many Turkish officials and Turkish mercenaries. The Parthians had long gone out of records, absorbed into the overall populace of Persia. There have been no extra Aryan nomads in the records of Central Asia; Mongolian human beings had replaced them. The Turks became masters of Asia from China to the Caspian.

The identical splendid pestilence at the stop of the second one century A.D. That had shattered the Roman Empire had

overthrown the Han dynasty in China. Then got here a period of division and of Hunnish conquests from which China arose refreshed, extra hastily and extra absolutely than Europe was destined to do. Before the cease of the 6th century China was reunited underneath the Suy dynasty, and this by the time of Heraclius gave place to the Tang dynasty, whose reign marks another super length of prosperity for China.

246

CHINESE EARTHENWARE ART OF THE TANG
DYNASTY, 616-906

CHINESE EARTHENWARE ART OF THE TANG
DYNASTY, 616-906

Specimens in glazed earthenware, in brown, inexperienced and buff, observed in tombs in China

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

Throughout the seventh, eighth and ninth centuries China became the maximum secure and civilized u . S . In the global. The Han dynasty had prolonged her boundaries in the north; the Suy and Tang dynasties now unfold her civilization to the south, and China 247began to expect the proportions she has to-day. In Central Asia indeed she reached a great deal in addition, extending at last, through tributary Turkish tribes, to Persia and the Caspian Sea.

The new China that had arisen changed into a very one of a kind land from the old China of the Hans. A new and more full of life literary college appeared, there has been a high-quality poetic revival; Buddhism had revolutionized philosophical and non secular idea. There have been fantastic advances in artistic work, in technical talent and in all the amenities of lifestyles. Tea became first used, paper synthetic and timber-block printing started. Millions of humans certainly have been main orderly, swish and kindly lives in China during those centuries when the attenuated populations of Europe and Western Asia

had been dwelling either in hovels, small walled cities or grim robber fortresses. While the mind of the west changed into black with theological obsessions, the thoughts of China became open and tolerant and enquiring.

One of the earliest monarchs of the Tang dynasty became Tai-tsung, who started out to reign in 627, the 12 months of the victory of Heraclius at Nineveh. He obtained an embassy from Heraclius, who became likely in search of an ally in the rear of Persia. From Persia itself came a celebration of Christian missionaries (635). They had been allowed to provide an explanation for their creed to Tai-tsung and he examined a Chinese translation of their Scriptures. He stated this peculiar faith suited, and gave permission for the foundation of a church and monastery.

To this monarch additionally (in 628) came messengers from Muhammad. They got here to Canton on a trading deliver. They had sailed the entire way from Arabia alongside the Indian coasts. Unlike Heraclius and Kavadh, Tai-Tsung gave these envoys a courteous listening to. He expressed his hobby in their theological ideas and assisted them to build a mosque in Canton, a mosque which survives, it's miles said, to these days, the oldest mosque within the global.

248

XLIII

MUHAMMAD AND ISLAM

A PROPHETIC amateur of records surveying the arena in the starting of the 7th century would possibly have concluded very moderately that it became simplest a question of some centuries before the complete of Europe and Asia fell

underneath Mongolian domination. There have been no symptoms of order or union in Western Europe, and the Byzantine and Persian Empires were glaringly bent upon a mutual destruction. India also changed into divided and wasted. On the opposite hand China turned into a regularly increasing empire which likely at that time exceeded all Europe in populace, and the Turkish folks that were developing to strength in Central Asia were disposed to paintings in accord with China. And any such prophecy might now not had been an altogether vain one. A time become to come inside the 13th century while a Mongolian overlord might rule from the Danube to the Pacific, and Turkish dynasties have been destined to reign over the whole Byzantine and Persian Empires, over Egypt and most of India.

Where our prophet would have been maximum possibly to have erred might had been in below-estimating the recuperative power of the Latin cease of Europe and in ignoring the latent forces of the Arabian desolate tract. Arabia would have seemed what it had been for times immemorial, the safe haven of small and bickering nomadic tribes. No Semitic humans had founded an empire now for more than 1000 years.

Then the Bedouin flared out for a short century of splendour. They unfold their rule and language from Spain to the limits of China. They gave the world a brand new subculture. They created a faith this is nevertheless to this day one of the maximum critical forces in the global.

249The guy who fired this Arab flame appears first in history because the young husband of the widow of a wealthy service provider of the city of Mecca, named Muhammad. Until he changed into 40 he did little or no to distinguish himself in the international. He appears to have taken sizable interest in religious discussion. Mecca become a pagan metropolis at that

time worshipping mainly a black stone, the Kaaba, of exquisite repute throughout all Arabia and a centre of pilgrimages; however there have been high-quality numbers of Jews inside the usa—indeed all of the southern portion of Arabia professed the Jewish faith—and there have been Christian churches in Syria.

About forty Muhammad started out to expand prophetic traits like the ones of the Hebrew prophets twelve hundred years earlier than him. He talked first to his wife of the One True God, and of the rewards and punishments of virtue and wickedness. There can be absolute confidence that his mind were very strongly influenced via Jewish and Christian thoughts. He gathered about him a small circle of believers and presently commenced to evangelise in the town towards the well-known idolatry. This made him extraordinarily unpopular with his fellow townsmen because the pilgrimages to the Kaaba were the chief source of such prosperity as Mecca enjoyed. He have become bolder and greater specific in his coaching, affirming himself to be the remaining chosen prophet of God entrusted with a task to best religion. Abraham, he declared, and Jesus Christ have been his forerunners. He were chosen to complete and perfect the revelation of God's will.

He produced verses which he stated have been communicated to him via an angel, and he had a bizarre vision in which he was taken up thru the Heavens to God and instructed in his assignment.

250

AT PRAYER IN THE DESERT

AT PRAYER IN THE DESERT

Photo: Lehnert & Landrock

As his coaching improved in force the hostility of his fellow townsmen elevated additionally. At final a plot was made to kill him; however he escaped with his trustworthy friend and disciple, Abu Bekr, to the friendly town of Medina which adopted his doctrine. Hostilities followed between Mecca and Medina which ended at final in a treaty. Mecca became to adopt the worship of the One True God and take delivery of Muhammad as his prophet, however the adherents of the new religion have been still to make the pilgrimage to Mecca simply as they'd performed once they were pagans. So Muhammad installed the One True God in 251 Mecca without injuring its pilgrim site visitors. In 629 Muhammad lower back to Mecca as its grasp, a year after he had despatched out these envoys of his to Heraclius, Tai-tsung, Kavadh and all of the rulers of the earth.

LOOKING ACROSS THE SEA OF SAND

LOOKING ACROSS THE SEA OF SAND

Photo: Lehnert & Landrock

Then for four years greater until his death in 632, Muhammad unfold his electricity over the relaxation of Arabia. He married some of better halves in his declining years, and his life on the whole became by present day requirements unedifying. He appears to have been a man compounded of very vast conceitedness, greed, foxy, self-deception and pretty honest religious passion. He dictated a ebook of injunctions and expositions, the Koran, which he declared changed into communicated to him from God. Regarded as literature or philosophy the Koran is absolutely unworthy of its alleged Divine authorship.

Yet when the manifest defects of Muhammad's life and writings were allowed for, there remains in Islam, this religion he imposed upon the Arabs, plenty electricity and inspiration. One is its uncompromising monotheism; its easy enthusiastic

religion in the rule of thumb and fatherhood of God and its freedom from theological complications. Another is its entire detachment from the sacrificial priest and the temple. It is a wholly prophetic faith, proof in opposition to any possibility of relapse towards blood sacrifices. In the Koran the restricted 252 and ceremonial nature of the pilgrimage to Mecca is said past the opportunity of dispute, and each precaution became taken by using Muhammad to prevent the deification of himself after his death. And a 3rd detail of strength lay inside the insistence of Islam upon the correct brotherhood and equality before God of all believers, some thing their colour, foundation or reputation.

These are the things that made Islam a power in human affairs. It has been said that the genuine founding father of the Empire of Islam become not a lot Muhammad as his buddy and helper, Abu Bekr. If Muhammad, together with his shifty person, was the mind and imagination of primitive Islam, Abu Bekr turned into its judgment of right and wrong and its will. Whenever Muhammad wavered Abu Bekr sustained him. And while Muhammad died, Abu Bekr have become Caliph (= successor), and with that faith that actions mountains, he set himself genuinely and sanely to organize the subjugation of the complete international to Allah—with little armies of 3,000 or four,000 Arabs—in line with those letters the prophet had written from Medina in 628 to all the monarchs of the world.

253

XLIV

THE GREAT DAYS OF THE ARABS

THERE follows the most tremendous story of conquest inside the entire history of our race. The Byzantine navy became

smashed on the warfare of the Yarmuk (a tributary of the Jordan) in 634; and the Emperor Heraclius, his power sapped by dropsy and his assets exhausted with the aid of the Persian warfare, noticed his new conquests in Syria, Damascus, Palmyra, Antioch, Jerusalem and the relaxation fall nearly with out resistance to the Moslim. Large elements in the populace went over to Islam. Then the Moslim became east. The Persians had located an in a position fashionable in Rustam; they'd a superb host with a force of elephants; and for three days they fought the Arabs at Kadessia (637) and broke at last in headlong rout.

The conquest of all Persia accompanied, and the Moslem Empire driven far into Western Turkestan and eastward until it met the Chinese. Egypt fell nearly without resistance to the brand new conquerors, who complete of a fanatical perception within the sufficiency of the Koran, wiped out the vestiges of the ebook-copying enterprise of the Alexandria Library. The tide of conquest poured along the north coast of Africa to the Straits of Gibraltar and Spain. Spain turned into invaded in 710 and the Pyrenees Mountains had been reached in 720. In 732 the Arab improve had reached the centre of France, but right here it became stopped for correct at the warfare of Poitiers and beat back as a ways because the Pyrenees once more. The conquest of Egypt had given the Moslim a fleet, and for a time it looked as although they would take Constantinople. They made repeated sea assaults among 672 and 718 but the outstanding city held out towards them.

Map: The Growth of the Moslem Power in 25 Years

Map: The Moslem Empire, 750 <small>A.D.</small>

The Arabs had little political aptitude and no political experience, and this extraordinary empire with its capital now at Damascus, which stretched from Spain to China, changed into destined to interrupt up very swiftly. From the very starting doctrinal differences undermined 254its harmony. But

our interest here lies no longer with the tale of its political disintegration but with its impact upon the human thoughts and upon the overall destinies of our race. The Arab intelligence have been flung the world over even more hastily and dramatically than had the Greek one thousand years earlier than. The intellectual stimulation of the entire international west of China, the smash-up of antique thoughts and improvement of latest ones, become widespread.

255In Persia this sparkling excited Arabic mind got here into touch now not simplest with Manichæan, Zoroastrian and Christian doctrine, but with the medical Greek literature, preserved not most effective in Greek however in Syrian translations. It discovered Greek getting to know in Egypt also. Every-in which, and specifically in Spain, it located an active Jewish culture of speculation and discussion. In Central Asia it met Buddhism and the material achievements of Chinese civilization. It learnt the manufacture of paper—which made printed books feasible—from the Chinese. And finally it got here into touch with Indian mathematics and philosophy.

JERUSALEM, SHOWING THE MOSQUE OF OMAR

JERUSALEM, SHOWING THE MOSQUE OF OMAR

Photo: Lehnert & Landrock

Very briskly the illiberal self-sufficiency of the early days of faith, which made the Koran seem the most effective possible e-book, became dropped. Learning sprang up everywhere inside the footsteps of the Arab conquerors. By the 8th century there was an educational 256agency at some stage in the whole “Arabized” international. In the ninth discovered guys in the colleges of Cordoba in Spain were corresponding with discovered guys in Cairo, Bagdad, Bokhara and Samarkand. The Jewish mind assimilated very simply with the Arab, and for a time the two Semitic races worked together thru the

medium of Arabic. Long after the political damage-up and enfeeblement of the Arabs, this intellectual network of the Arab-speaking global endured. It became nonetheless producing very widespread consequences in the 13th century.

VIEW OF CAIRO MOSQUES

VIEW OF CAIRO MOSQUES

Photo: Lehnert & Landrock

So it turned into that the systematic accumulation and grievance of information which turned into first all started through the Greeks turned into resumed in this dazzling renaissance of the Semitic international. The seed of Aristotle and the museum of Alexandria that had lain so long inactive and neglected now germinated and started to develop toward fruition. Very terrific advances were made in mathematical, clinical and physical science. 257The clumsy Roman numerals were ousted through the Arabic figures we use to these days and the zero signal become first hired. The very name algebra is Arabic. So is the phrase chemistry. The names of such stars as Algol, Aldebaran and Boötes maintain the strains of Arab conquests inside the sky. Their philosophy was destined to reanimate the medieval philosophy of France and Italy and the entire Christian international.

The Arab experimental chemists were referred to as alchemists, and they had been nevertheless sufficiently barbaric in spirit to hold their methods and outcomes mystery as a long way as viable. They realized from the very starting what substantial benefits their feasible discoveries may supply them, and what far-achieving outcomes they might have on human lifestyles. They got here upon many metallurgical and technical gadgets of the utmost cost, alloys and dyes, distilling, tinctures and essences, optical glass; but the chief ends they sought, they sought in useless. One became “the philosopher’s stone”—a way of changing the steel factors one

into any other and so getting a manipulate of synthetic gold, and the other turned into the elixir vitæ, a stimulant that would revivify age and prolong existence indefinitely. The crabbed patient experimenting of these Arab alchemists spread into the Christian world. The fascination in their enquiries unfold. Very step by step the sports of these alchemists became extra social and co-operative. They determined it worthwhile to change and evaluate ideas. By insensible gradations the closing of the alchemists have become the primary of the experimental philosophers.

The antique alchemists sought the truth seeker's stone which become to transmute base metals to gold, and an elixir of immortality; they located the methods of contemporary experimental science which promise in the long run to give guy illimitable strength over the arena and over his own destiny.

258

XLV

THE DEVELOPMENT OF LATIN CHRISTENDOM

IT is really worth whilst to note the extremely shrunken dimensions of the percentage of the arena ultimate below Aryan manipulate within the seventh and eighth centuries. A thousand years earlier than, the Aryan-speakme races have been triumphant over all the civilized global west of China. Now the Mongol had thrust as a long way as Hungary, nothing of Asia remained below Aryan rule besides the Byzantine dominions in Asia Minor, and all Africa became lost and nearly all Spain. The exceptional Hellenic international had shrunken to three possessions round the nucleus of the trading metropolis of Constantinople, and the reminiscence of the Roman world become kept alive through the Latin of the

western Christian priests. In vivid evaluation to this story of retrogression, the Semitic lifestyle had risen again from subjugation and obscurity after a thousand years of darkness.

Yet the vitality of the Nordic peoples was now not exhausted. Confined now to Central and North-Western Europe and extraordinarily muddled in their social and political ideas, they had been although constructing up steadily and regularly a new social order and preparing unconsciously for the healing of a power even extra widespread than that that they had formerly enjoyed.

We have told how at the start of the sixth century there remained no valuable authorities in Western Europe at all. That global turned into divided up among numbers of nearby rulers keeping their own as they may. This turned into too insecure a situation to closing; a machine of co-operation and association grew up in this sickness, the feudal gadget, which has left its strains upon European life as much as the prevailing time. This feudal device turned into a type of crystallization of society about power. Everywhere the lone guy felt insecure and changed into prepared to negotiate a certain amount of his liberty for assist and protection. He sought a stronger man as his lord and protector; 259he gave him military offerings and paid him dues, and in go back he become showed in his ownership of what became his. His lord once more located safety in vassalage to a still greater lord. Cities also located it convenient to have feudal protectors, and monasteries and church estates sure themselves by means of comparable ties. No doubt in many instances allegiance was claimed earlier than it changed into offered; the device grew downward in addition to upward. So a kind of pyramidal gadget grew up, various widely in special localities, allowing in the beginning a tremendous play of violence and personal battle but making steadily for order and a brand new reign of law. The pyramids grew up until a few became recognizable as kingdoms. Already through the early 6th century a Frankish

kingdom existed beneath its founder Clovis in what's now France and the Netherlands, and currently Visigothic and Lombard and Gothic kingdoms had been in existence.

The Moslim when they crossed the Pyrenees in 720 observed this Frankish state beneath the sensible rule of Charles Martel, the Mayor of the Palace of a degenerate descendant of Clovis, and skilled the decisive defeat of Poitiers (732) at his arms. This Charles Martel became practically overlord of Europe north of the Alps from the Pyrenees to Hungary. He dominated over a mess of subordinate lords speaking French- Latin, and High and Low German languages. His son Pepin extinguished the closing descendants of Clovis and took the kingly country and identify. His grandson Charlemagne, who began to reign in 768, determined himself lord of a realm so massive that he should think of reviving the title of Latin Emperor. He conquered North Italy and made himself master of Rome.

Map: Area extra or much less beneath Frankish dominion within the time of

Charles Martel

Approaching the tale of Europe as we do from the broader horizons of a global records we will see plenty extra quite than the mere nationalist historian how cramping and disastrous this subculture of the Latin Roman Empire was. A narrow intense battle for this phantom predominance become to eat European electricity for greater than 1000 years. Through all that period it is viable to hint positive unquenchable antagonisms; they run via the wits of Europe like the obsessions of a demented mind. One driving pressure become this ambition of a success rulers, which Charlemagne (Charles the Great) embodied, to grow to be Cæsar. The realm of Charlemagne consisted of a complex of feudal German states at 260numerous ranges of barbarism. West of the Rhine, maximum of these German peoples had learnt to talk various Latinized dialects which fused at closing to shape French. East

of the Rhine, the racially comparable German peoples did not lose their German speech. On account of this, conversation changed into tough among these two organizations of barbarian conquerors and a split effortlessly brought approximately. The cut up turned into made the greater smooth via the reality that the Frankish usage made it appear natural to divide the empire of Charlemagne amongst his sons at his death. So one thing of the history of Europe from the days of Charlemagne onwards is a records of first this monarch and his own family after which that, struggling to a precarious headship of the kings, princes, dukes, bishops and towns of Europe, even as a regularly deepening antagonism among the French and German speakme factors develops in the medley. There become a formality of election for every emperor; and the climax of his ambition changed into to conflict to the possession of that tired, misplaced capital Rome and to a coronation there.

261 The subsequent factor within the European political ailment become the resolve of the Church at Rome to make no temporal prince however the Pope of Rome himself emperor in impact. He changed into already pontifex maximus; for all realistic functions he held the decaying town; if he had no armies he had at the least a extensive propaganda business enterprise in his priests during the entire Latin international; if he had little power over guys's our bodies he held the keys of heaven and hell in their imaginations and will workout a great deal affect upon their souls. So in the course of the center ages at the same time as one prince manœuvred against another first for equality, then for ascendancy, and at ultimate for the best prize, the Pope of Rome, from time to time boldly, now and again craftily, sometimes feebly—for the Popes were a succession of oldish men and the common reign of a Pope was not extra than two years—manœuvred for the submission of all the princes to himself because the final overlord of Christendom.

But those antagonisms of prince against prince and of Emperor towards Pope do not with the aid of any manner exhaust the factors of the European confusion. There changed into still an Emperor in Constantinople talking Greek and claiming the allegiance of all Europe. When Charlemagne sought to revive the empire, it was merely the Latin cease of the empire he revived. It was heral that a experience of competition between Latin Empire and Greek Empire must expand very without problems. And nonetheless more simply did the rivalry of Greek-talking Christianity and the more moderen Latin-speaking model increase. The Pope of Rome claimed to be the successor of St. Peter, the chief of the apostles of Christ, and the top of the Christian network anywhere. Neither the emperor nor the patriarch in Constantinople have been disposed to renowned this claim. A dispute approximately a best factor in the doctrine of the Holy Trinity consummated a protracted series of dissensions in a very last rupture in 1054. The Latin Church and the Greek Church became and remained thereafter distinct and albeit opposed. This antagonism must be brought to the others in our estimate of the conflicts that wasted Latin Christendom in the middle a while.

262

STATUE OF CHARLEMAGNE IN FRONT OF NOTRE DAME, PARIS

STATUE OF CHARLEMAGNE IN FRONT OF NOTRE DAME, PARIS

The figure is absolutely imaginary and romantic. There is no contemporary portrait of Charlemagne

Photo: Rischgitz

Upon this divided world of Christendom rained the blows of three sets of antagonists. About the Baltic and North Seas remained a series of Nordic tribes who were most effective very slowly and reluctantly 263Christianized; those had been the Northmen. They had taken to the ocean and piracy, and

had been raiding all the Christian coasts all the way down to Spain. They had driven up the Russian rivers to the desolate critical lands and taken their transport over into the south-flowing rivers. They had pop out upon the Caspian and Black Seas as pirates also. They set up principalities in Russia; they had been the first human beings to be called Russians. These Northmen Russians got here near to taking Constantinople. England in the early ninth century was a Christianized Low German u . S . A . Under a king, Egbert, a protégé and pupil of Charlemagne. The Northmen wrested half of the dominion from his successor Alfred the Great (886), and ultimately underneath Canute (1016) made themselves masters of the entire land. Under Rolph the Ganger (912) another band of Northmen conquered the north of France, which have become Normandy.

Canute ruled no longer handiest over England however over Norway and Denmark, however his quick empire fell to pieces at his loss of life through that political weak spot of the barbaric peoples—division among a ruler's sons. It is interesting to take a position what would possibly have occurred if this temporary union of the Northmen had persevered. They have been a race of surprising boldness and strength. They sailed in their galleys even to Iceland and Greenland. They have been the first Europeans to land on American soil. Later on Norman adventurers were to get better Sicily from the Saracens and sack Rome. It is a captivating component to imagine what a remarkable northern sea-faring strength may have grown out of Canute's nation, reaching from America to Russia.

To the east of the Germans and Latinized Europeans become a medley of Slav tribes and Turkish peoples. Prominent amongst these were the Magyars or Hungarians who were coming westward for the duration of the eighth and ninth centuries. Charlemagne held them for a time, however after his demise they established themselves in what is now Hungary; and after

the style in their kindred predecessors, the Huns, raided every summer into the settled components of Europe. In 938 they went via Germany into France, crossed the Alps into North Italy, and so got here home, burning, robbing and destroying.

Finally pounding away from the south on the vestiges of the 264 Roman Empire have been the Saracens. They had made themselves largely masters of the ocean; their most effective bold adversaries upon the water have been the Northmen, the Russian Northmen out of the Black Sea and the Northmen of the west.

Map: Europe on the death of Charlemagne—814

Hemmed in via those extra vigorous and competitive peoples, amidst forces they did not recognize and dangers they couldn't estimate, Charlemagne and after him a series of different bold spirits took up the futile drama of restoring the Western Empire beneath the call of the Holy Roman Empire. From the time of Charlemagne onward this idea obsessed the political existence of Western Europe, whilst in the East the Greek 1/2 of the Roman electricity decayed and faded until at remaining not anything remained of it in any respect but the corrupt trading town of Constantinople and a few miles of territory about it. Politically the continent of Europe remained conventional and uncreative from the time of Charlemagne onward for 1000 years.

265 The call of Charlemagne looms huge in European history but his character is however indistinctly visible. He couldn't study nor write, however he had a extensive admire for learning; he appreciated to be examine aloud to at meals and he had a weak point for theological dialogue. At his wintry weather quarters at Aix-l. A.- Chapelle or Mayence he accrued about him some of found out men and collected tons from their communication. In the summer he made conflict,

towards the Spanish Saracens, in opposition to the Slavs and Magyars, in opposition to the Saxons, and other nonetheless heathen German tribes. It is dubious whether the concept of turning into Cæsar in succession to Romulus Augustulus passed off to him earlier than his acquisition of North Italy, or whether it turned into recommended to him by using Pope Leo III, who become anxious to make the Latin Church impartial of Constantinople.

There have been the maximum remarkable manœuvres at Rome among the Pope and the possible emperor in order to make it seem or no longer seem like the Pope gave him the imperial crown. The Pope succeeded in crowning his tourist and conqueror by way of wonder in St. Peter's on Christmas Day 800 A.D. He produced a crown, placed it on the head of Charlemagne and hailed him Cæsar and Augustus. There become extraordinary applause a number of the human beings. Charlemagne changed into never pleased at the manner in which the element turned into accomplished, it rankled in his mind as a defeat; and he left the most careful instructions to his son that he became no longer to permit the Pope crown him emperor; he changed into to seize the crown into his personal fingers and placed it on his own head himself. So at the very outset of this imperial revival we see beginning the age-long dispute of Pope and Emperor for priority. But Louis the Pious, the son of Charlemagne, not noted his father's commands and changed into absolutely submissive to the Pope.

The empire of Charlemagne fell aside at the demise of Louis the Pious and the split among the French-speaking Franks and the German-talking Franks widened. The next emperor to rise up turned into Otto, the son of a sure Henry the Fowler, a Saxon, who have been elected King of Germany by an meeting of German princes and prelates in 919. Otto descended upon Rome and changed into topped emperor there in 962. This Saxon line came to an quit early in the 11th

century and gave area to other German rulers. The feudal princes and nobles to the west who spoke diverse French dialects did no longer fall under the sway of these German emperors after the Carolingian line, the line that is descended from Charlemagne, had come to an end, and no part of Britain ever got here into the Holy Roman Empire. The Duke of Normandy, the King of France and a number of lesser feudal rulers remained out of doors. In 987 the Kingdom of France passed out of the possession of the Carolingian line into the arms of Hugh Capet, whose descendants were nonetheless reigning within the eighteenth century. At the time of Hugh Capet the King of France dominated handiest a comparatively small territory round Paris.

In 1066 England became attacked nearly simultaneously by using an invasion of the Norwegian Northmen below King Harold Hardrada and by way of the Latinized Northmen under the Duke of Normandy. Harold King of England defeated the previous on the war of Stamford Bridge, and became defeated by using the latter at Hastings. England turned into conquered by the Normans, and so reduce off from Scandinavian, Teutonic and Russian affairs, and brought into the maximum intimate family members and conflicts with the French. For the next 4 centuries the English were entangled in the conflicts of the French feudal princes and wasted upon the fields of France.

267

XLVI

THE CRUSADES AND THE AGE OF PAPAL DOMINION

IT is thrilling to note that Charlemagne corresponded with the Caliph Haroun-al-Raschid, the Haroun-al-Raschid of the Arabian Nights. It is recorded that Haroun-al-Raschid sent

ambassadors from Bagdad—which had now replaced Damascus because the Moslem capital—with a high-quality tent, a water clock, an elephant and the keys of the Holy Sepulchre. This latter gift became admirably calculated to set the Byzantine Empire and this new Holy Roman Empire by means of the ears as to which became the right protector of the Christians in Jerusalem.

These offers remind us that whilst Europe inside the 9th century changed into still a weltering ailment of battle and pillage, there flourished a tremendous Arab Empire in Egypt and Mesopotamia, far extra civilized than something Europe could show. Here literature and technology nevertheless lived; the arts flourished, and the mind of guy could flow without fear or superstition. And even in Spain and North Africa where the Saracenic dominions have been falling into political confusion there has been a lively highbrow lifestyles. Aristotle turned into examine and mentioned by means of these Jews and Arabs in the course of these centuries of European darkness. They guarded the ignored seeds of technology and philosophy.

North-east of the Caliph's dominions changed into some of Turkish tribes. They have been converted to Islam, and they held the religion much extra truly and fiercely than the actively highbrow Arabs and Persians to the south. In the tenth century the Turks have been developing strong and energetic while the Arab strength became divided and decaying. The family members of the Turks to the Empire of the Caliphate have become very just like the members of the family of the Medes to the last Babylonian Empire fourteen centuries earlier than. In the eleventh century a set of Turkish tribes, the Seljuk Turks, came down into Mesopotamia and made the Caliph their nominal ruler however clearly their 268captive and device. They conquered Armenia. Then they struck on the remnants of the Byzantine electricity in Asia Minor. In 1071 the Byzantine military changed into fully smashed on the

struggle of Melasgird, and the Turks swept forward till not a hint of Byzantine rule remained in Asia. They took the fortress of Nicæa over towards Constantinople, and prepared to try that town.

The Byzantine emperor, Michael VII, became overcome with terror. He was already closely engaged in battle with a band of Norman adventurers who had seized Durazzo, and with a fierce Turkish human beings, the Petschenegs, who have been raiding over the Danube. In his extremity he sought assist where he could, and it's miles top notch that he did not appeal to the western emperor however to the Pope of Rome as the top of Latin Christendom. He wrote to Pope Gregory VII, and his successor Alexius Comnenus wrote nonetheless extra urgently to Urban II.

CRUSADER TOMBS IN EXETER CATHEDRAL

CRUSADER TOMBS IN EXETER CATHEDRAL

Photo: Mansell

This became now not a quarter of a century from the rupture of the Latin and Greek church buildings. That controversy turned into nevertheless vividly alive in men's minds, and this catastrophe to Byzantium must have supplied itself to the Pope as a ultimate possibility for reasserting the supremacy of the Latin Church over the dissentient Greeks. Moreover this occasion gave the Pope a hazard to deal with different matters that troubled western Christendom very substantially. One become the custom of "personal struggle" which disordered social life, and the other changed into the superabundant combating energy of the Low Germans and Christianized Northmen and particularly of the Franks and Normans. A spiritual battle, the Crusade, the War of the Cross, turned into preached towards the Turkish captors of Jerusalem, and a truce to all conflict amongst Christians (1095). The declared item of this conflict turned into the recuperation of the Holy

Sepulchre from the unbelievers. A man known as Peter the Hermit carried on a popular propaganda for the duration of France and Germany on extensively democratic lines. He went clad in a coarse garment, barefooted on an ass, he carried a huge go and harangued the crowd in street or market-area or church. He denounced the cruelties practised upon the Christian pilgrims by using the Turks, and the disgrace of the Holy Sepulchre being in any however Christian hands. The culmination of centuries of Christian coaching have become obvious inside the reaction. A superb wave of enthusiasm swept the western world, and famous Christendom found itself.

VIEW OF CAIRO

VIEW OF CAIRO

Photo: Lehnert & Landrock

Such a widespread rebellion of the not unusual human beings in relation to a unmarried idea as now happened turned into a new factor in the records of our race. There is not anything to parallel it in the previous history of the 270Roman Empire or of India or China. On a smaller scale, but, there were similar moves among the Jewish human beings after their liberation from the Babylonian captivity, and in a while Islam became to show a parallel susceptibility to collective feeling. Such movements were actually linked with the new spirit that had come into life with the improvement of the missionary-teaching religions. The Hebrew prophets, Jesus and his disciples, Mani, Muhammad, were all exhorters of fellows's individual souls. They delivered the non-public sense of right and wrong face to face with God. Before that point faith have been an awful lot more a commercial enterprise of fetish, of pseudoscience, than of sense of right and wrong. The antique sort of faith turned upon temple, initiated priest and mystical sacrifice, and ruled the common guy like a slave by means of worry. The new type of religion made a man of him.

The preaching of the First Crusade turned into the primary stirring of the commonplace humans in European records. It may be an excessive amount of to name it the beginning of modern democracy, however actually at that time cutting-edge democracy stirred. Before very lengthy we shall locate it stirring again, and elevating the most disturbing social and religious questions.

Certainly this primary stirring of democracy ended very pitifully and unluckily. Considerable our bodies of commonplace people, crowds instead of armies, set out eastward from France and the Rhineland and Central Europe without looking ahead to leaders or right gadget to rescue the Holy Sepulchre. This changed into the “people’s campaign.” Two tremendous mobs blundered into Hungary, mistook the currently transformed Magyars for pagans, dedicated atrocities and were massacred. A 0.33 multitude with a further careworn mind, after a high-quality pogrom of the Jews within the Rhineland, marched eastward, and turned into additionally destroyed in Hungary. Two other large crowds, underneath the leadership of Peter the Hermit himself, reached Constantinople, crossed the Bosphorus, and were massacred as opposed to defeated via the Seljuk Turks. So started out and ended this first motion of the European humans, as human beings.

Next year (1097) the real preventing forces crossed the Bosphorus. Essentially they had been Norman in leadership and spirit. They stormed Nicæa, marched by way of tons the equal path as Alexander had observed fourteen centuries before, to Antioch. The siege of Antioch 271 saved them a yr, and in June 1099 they invested Jerusalem. It turned into stormed after a month’s siege. The slaughter turned into horrible. Men riding on horseback have been splashed through the blood inside the streets. At nightfall on July 15th the Crusaders had fought their way into the Church of the Holy Sepulchre and triumph over all opposition there: blood-

stained, weary and “sobbing from extra of pleasure” they knelt down in prayer.

THE HORSES OF S. MARK, VENICE

THE HORSES OF S. MARK, VENICE

Originally on the arch of Trajan at Constantinople, the Doge Dandolo V took them after the Fourth Crusade, to Venice, whence Napoleon I eliminated them to Paris, but in 1815 they had been again to Venice. During the Great War of 1914-18 they have been hidden away for fear of air raids.

Photo: D. McLeish

Immediately the hostility of Latin and Greek broke out once more. The Crusaders were the servants of the Latin Church, and the Greek patriarch of Jerusalem discovered himself in a far worse case under the effective Latins than under the Turks. The Crusaders located themselves among Byzantine and Turk and combating both. Much of Asia Minor turned into recovered via the Byzantine Empire, and the Latin princes have been left, a buffer between Turk and Greek, with Jerusalem and a few small principalities, of which Edessa was one of the chief, in Syria. Their grip even on those possessions changed into precarious, and in 1144 Edessa fell to the Moslim, main to an ineffective Second Crusade, which didn't recover Edessa however saved Antioch from a similar destiny.

272In 1169 the forces of Islam were rallied beneath a Kurdish adventurer named Saladin who had made himself grasp of Egypt. He preached a Holy War against the Christians, recaptured Jerusalem in 1187, and so provoked the Third Crusade. This didn't recover Jerusalem. In the Fourth Crusade (1202-four) the Latin Church became frankly upon the Greek Empire, and there was not even a pretence of combating the Turks. It commenced from Venice and in 1204 it stormed Constantinople. The superb rising trading metropolis of Venice changed into the chief on this adventure, and maximum of the

coasts and islands of the Byzantine Empire have been annexed by using the Venetians. A “Latin” emperor (Baldwin of Flanders) become set up in Constantinople and the Latin and Greek Church have been declared to be reunited. The Latin emperors dominated in Constantinople from 1204 to 1261 whilst the Greek international shook itself free again from Roman predominance.

The twelfth century then and the hole of the 13th turned into the age of papal ascendancy just as the eleventh become the age of the ascendancy of the Seljuk Turks and the tenth the age of the Northmen. A united Christendom below the guideline of the Pope came closer to being a working fact than it ever was earlier than or after that time.

273

A COURTYARD IN THE ALHAMBRA

A COURTYARD IN THE ALHAMBRA

Photo: Lehnert & Landrock

In those centuries a simple Christian religion was real and substantial over fantastic areas of Europe. Rome itself had surpassed thru some dark and discreditable levels; few writers can be determined to excuse the lives of Popes John XI and John XII in the tenth century; they have been abominable creatures; however the heart and body of Latin Christendom had remained earnest and simple; the generality of the not unusual priests and clergymen and nuns had lived exemplary and devoted lives. Upon the wealth of self belief such lives created rested the energy of the church. Among the excellent Popes of the past have been Gregory the Great, Gregory I (590-604) and Leo III (795-816) who invited Charlemagne to be Cæsar and topped him in spite of himself. Towards the near of the eleventh century there arose a splendid clerical statesman, Hildebrand, who ended his life as Pope Gregory VII (1073- 1085). Next however one after him got here Urban

II (1087-1099), the Pope of the First Crusade. These had been the founders of this era of papal greatness throughout which the Popes lorded it over the Emperors. From Bulgaria to Ireland and 274 from Norway to Sicily and Jerusalem the Pope was preferred. Gregory VII obliged the Emperor Henry IV to be available in penitence to him at Canossa and to watch for forgiveness for 3 days and nights in the courtyard of the fortress, clad in sackcloth and barefooted to the snow. In 1176 at Venice the Emperor Frederick (Frederick Barbarossa), knelt to Pope Alexander III and swore fealty to him.

The extremely good strength of the church within the starting of the 11th century lay within the wills and consciences of guys. It failed to preserve the moral prestige on which its energy became based. In the opening decades of the fourteenth century it turned into observed that the energy of the Pope had evaporated. What became it that destroyed the naive confidence of the not unusual people of Christendom within the church so that they could not rally to its attraction and serve its purposes?

The first hassle changed into without a doubt the accumulation of wealth by way of the church. The church by no means died, and there was a common disposition at the a part of loss of life childless human beings to depart lands to the church. Penitent sinners have been exhorted to achieve this. Accordingly in many European international locations as much as a fourth of the land became church property. The urge for food for property grows with what it feeds upon. Already in the thirteenth century it became being stated anywhere that the clergymen were not properly guys, that they were constantly looking for money and legacies.

The kings and princes disliked this alienation of property very substantially. In the region of feudal lords able to army help, they discovered their land assisting abbeys and monks and

nuns. And these lands have been honestly below foreign dominion. Even before the time of Pope Gregory VII there were a battle between the princes and the papacy over the query of “investitures,” the question this is of who need to rent the bishops. If that power rested with the Pope and not the King, then the latter misplaced control now not handiest of the consciences of his subjects however of a great part of his dominions. For also the clergy claimed exemption from taxation. They paid their taxes to Rome. And not simplest that, however the church additionally claimed the right to levy a tax of one-tenth upon the property of the layman in addition to the taxes he paid his prince.

275The records of nearly each united states in Latin Christendom tells of the equal section inside the 11th century, a phase of warfare between monarch and Pope on the issue of investitures and generally it tells of a victory for the Pope. He claimed with the intention to excommunicate the prince, to absolve his topics from their allegiance to him, to understand a successor. He claimed on the way to put a nation underneath an interdict, after which almost all priestly features ceased except the sacraments of baptism, confirmation and penance; the clergymen could neither preserve the everyday offerings, marry human beings, nor bury the useless. With those weapons it changed into possible for the twelfth century Popes to shrink the most recalcitrant princes and overawe the most restive peoples. These were huge powers, and vast powers are handiest to be used on first-rate occasions. The Popes used them at remaining with a frequency that staled their impact. Within thirty years at the give up of the 12th century we find Scotland, France and England in turn underneath an interdict. And additionally the Popes couldn't withstand the temptation to evangelise crusades towards offending princes—until the crusading spirit was extinct.

It is viable that if the Church of Rome had struggled surely towards the princes and had had a care to preserve its keep

upon the overall thoughts, it would have achieved a permanent dominion over all Christendom. But the excessive claims of the Pope had been meditated as vanity in the conduct of the clergy. Before the 11th century the Roman monks ought to marry; they'd close ties with the people among whom they lived; they were certainly part of the human beings. Gregory VII made them celibates; he cut the clergymen off from too fantastic an intimacy with the laymen in order to bind them more intently to Rome, but certainly he opened a fissure between the church and the commonalty. The church had its personal law courts. Cases related to now not merely priests but clergymen, college students, crusaders, widows, orphans and the helpless have been reserved for the clerical courts, and so had been all matters referring to wills, marriages and oaths and all cases of sorcery, heresy and blasphemy. Whenever the layman located himself in battle with the priest he had to visit a clerical court. The responsibilities of peace and warfare fell upon his shoulders by myself and left the priest unfastened. It isn't any brilliant surprise that jealousy and hatred of the monks grew up in the Christian world.

276 Never did Rome appear to realize that its electricity become inside the consciences of common guys. It fought against non secular enthusiasm, which ought to had been its ally, and it pressured doctrinal orthodoxy upon honest doubt and aberrant opinion. When the church interfered in topics of morality it had the commonplace man with it, however no longer when it interfered in subjects of doctrine. When inside the south of France Waldo taught a go back to the simplicity of Jesus in faith and lifestyles, Innocent III preached a crusade towards the Waldenses, Waldo's fans, and accredited them to be suppressed with fire, sword, rape and the maximum abominable cruelties. When once more St. Francis of Assisi (1181-1226) taught the imitation of Christ and a lifestyles of poverty and provider, his fans, the Franciscans, were persecuted, scourged, imprisoned and dispersed. In 1318 four of them had been burnt alive at Marseilles. On the other hand

the fiercely orthodox order of the Dominicans, based through St. Dominic (1170-1221) was strongly supported by using Innocent III, who with its help set up an corporation, the Inquisition, for the searching of heresy and the ache of loose thought.

So it become that the church by excessive claims, by unrighteous privileges, and with the aid of an irrational intolerance destroyed that unfastened faith of the commonplace man which turned into the very last supply of all its electricity. The tale of its decline tells of no ok foemen from with out however continually of degradation from inside.

277

XLVII

RECALCITRANT PRINCES AND THE GREAT SCHISM

ONE very fantastic weak spot of the Roman Church in its battle to at ease the headship of all Christendom became the manner wherein the Pope turned into selected.

If indeed the papacy become to achieve its take place ambition and establish one rule and one peace throughout Christendom, then it was vitally necessary that it need to have a strong, steady and continuous route. In those first rate days of its opportunity it wanted earlier than all things that the Popes after they took office ought to have the ability guys within the high of life, that each need to have his successor-designate with whom he may want to talk the policy of the church, and that the paperwork and procedures of election must be clean, definite, unalterable and unassailable. Unhappily none of this stuff obtained. It became not even clean who should vote in the election of a Pope, nor whether the Byzantine or Holy

Roman Emperor had a voice within the depend. That very first-rate papal statesman Hildebrand (Pope Gregory VII, 1073-1085) did an awful lot to regularize the election. He restricted the votes to the Roman cardinals and he reduced the Emperor's proportion to a formulation of assent conceded to him by using the church, however he made no provision for a successor-designate and he left it possible for the disputes of the cardinals to hold the See vacant, as in some cases it changed into stored vacant, for a yr or greater.

278

MILAN CATHEDRALA COURTYARD IN THE ALHAMBRA

MILAN CATHEDRALA COURTYARD IN THE ALHAMBRA

View showing the amazing carvings characteristic of the ninety eight spires of the edifice

The effects of this need of company definition are to be visible in the entire records of the papacy up to the 16th century. From pretty early times onward there had been disputed elections and two or extra guys every claiming to be Pope. The church would then be subjected to the indignity of going to the Emperor or some different outdoor arbiter to settle the dispute. And the career of all people of the splendid Popes led to a observe of interrogation. At his death the church is probably left headless and as useless as a decapitated 279body. Or he might be replaced by way of a few antique rival eager handiest to discredit and undo his work. Or a few enfeebled antique guy tottering on the brink of the grave might be triumphant him.

It was inevitable that this atypical weak point of the papal agency ought to appeal to the interference of the diverse German princes, the French King, and the Norman and French Kings who ruled in England; that they should all try to influence the elections, and feature a Pope in their very own

hobby hooked up in the Lateran Palace at Rome. And the greater powerful and important the Pope became in European affairs, the greater pressing did those interventions come to be. Under the circumstances it's far no tremendous wonder that a number of the Popes have been susceptible and futile. The incredible aspect is that many of them were able and courageous guys.

One of the most energetic and thrilling of the Popes of this wonderful period was Innocent III (1198-1216) who was so lucky as to emerge as Pope earlier than he turned into thirty-eight. He and his successors were pitted towards an excellent more exciting character, the Emperor Frederick II; Stupor mundi he became referred to as, the Wonder of the arena. The war of this monarch in opposition to Rome is a turning vicinity in records. In the stop Rome defeated him and destroyed his dynasty, however he left the prestige of the church and Pope so badly wounded that its wounds festered and caused its decay.

Frederick become the son of the Emperor Henry VI and his mom become the daughter of Roger I, the Norman King of Sicily. He inherited this state in 1198 while he was a child of 4 years. Innocent III have been made his mother or father. Sicily in the ones days have been but recently conquered by means of the Normans; the Court turned into half oriental and complete of quite educated Arabs; and some of those have been related within the education of the younger king. No doubt they have been at a few pains to make their point of view clear to him. He got a Moslem view of Christianity in addition to a Christian view of Islam, and the sad result of this double gadget of coaching become a view, great in that age of faith, that each one religions were impostures. He talked freely at the concern; his heresies and blasphemies are on document.

As the younger guy grew up he located himself in conflict together with his mum or dad. Innocent III desired altogether an excessive amount of from his ward. 280When the possibility got here for Frederick to succeed as Emperor, the Pope intervened with situations. Frederick should promise to put down heresy in Germany with a strong hand. Moreover he ought to relinquish his crown in Sicily and South Italy, due to the fact otherwise he might be too sturdy for the Pope. And the German clergy were to be free of all taxation. Frederick agreed however and not using a goal of retaining his phrase. The Pope had already brought about the French King to make battle upon his own subjects in France, the cruel and bloody crusade against the Waldenses; he wanted Frederick to do the identical issue in Germany. But Frederick being some distance greater of a heretic than any of the simple pietists who had incurred the Pope's animosity, lacked the crusading impulse. And while Innocent advised him to crusade towards the Moslim and get better Jerusalem he turned into equally prepared to promise and equally slack in his overall performance.

A TYPICAL CRUSADER: DON RODRIGO DE
CARDENAS

A TYPICAL CRUSADER: DON RODRIGO DE
CARDENAS

From the Church of S. Pedro at Ocana, Spain

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

Having secured the imperial crown Frederick II stayed in Sicily, which he greatly favored to Germany as a residence, and did not anything to redeem any of his guarantees to Innocent III, who died baffled in 1216.

281Honorius III, who succeeded Innocent, should do no better with Frederick, and Gregory IX (1227) came to the papal throne clearly resolved to settle bills with this young man at any price. He excommunicated him. Frederick II was denied

all of the comforts of religion. In the 1/2-Arab Court of Sicily this produced singularly little discomfort. And additionally the Pope addressed a public letter to the Emperor reciting his vices (which were indisputable), his heresies, and his widespread misconduct. To this Frederick answered in a record of diabolical capability. It became addressed to all of the princes of Europe, and it made the primary clear declaration of the difficulty between the Pope and the princes. He made a shattering assault upon the show up ambition of the Pope to end up absolutely the ruler of all Europe. He counseled a union of princes against this usurpation. He directed the attention of the princes especially to the wealth of the church.

Having fired off this lethal missile Frederick resolved to perform his twelve-12 months-vintage promise and pass upon a crusade. This became the Sixth Crusade (1228). It became as a crusade, farcical. Frederick II went to Egypt and met and mentioned affairs with the Sultan. These two gentlemen, each of sceptical evaluations, exchanged congenial perspectives, made a business convention to their mutual gain, and agreed to transfer Jerusalem to Frederick. This certainly turned into a brand new kind of campaign, a campaign by using non-public treaty. Here changed into no blood splashing the conqueror, no “weeping with extra of joy.” As this surprising crusader was an excommunicated man, he needed to be content with a purely secular coronation as King of Jerusalem, taking the crown from the altar along with his personal hand—for all of the clergy were sure to shun him. He then lower back to Italy, chased the papal armies which had invaded his dominions returned to their own territories, and obliged the Pope to furnish him absolution from his excommunication. So a prince might treat the Pope in the thirteenth century, and there has been now no typhoon of famous indignation to avenge him. Those days had been beyond.

In 1239 Gregory IX resumed his war with Frederick, excommunicated him for a 2d time, and renewed that conflict

of public abuse wherein the papacy had already suffered significantly. The controversy became revived after Gregory IX was useless, while Innocent IV was Pope; and once more a devastating letter, which guys have been bound to recollect, turned into written via Frederick against the church. He denounced the pride and irreligion of the clergy, and ascribed all of the corruptions of the time to their satisfaction and wealth. He proposed to his fellow princes a trendy confiscation of church assets—for the coolest of the church. It turned into an offer that in no way afterwards left the creativeness of the European princes.

We will not go on to tell of his final years. The specific events of his existence are a ways less giant than its fashionable atmosphere. It is viable to piece collectively some thing of his court existence in Sicily. He became high-priced in his way of residing, and keen on lovely matters. He is described as licentious. But it's far clear that he was a man of very useful curiosity and inquiry. He amassed Jewish and Moslem as well as Christian philosophers at his courtroom, and he did an awful lot to irrigate the Italian mind with Saracenic impacts. Through him the Arabic numerals and algebra have been introduced to Christian students, and amongst other philosophers at his court docket changed into Michael Scott, who translated portions of Aristotle and the commentaries thereon of the high-quality Arab truth seeker Averroes (of Cordoba). In 1224 Frederick based the University of Naples, and he enlarged and enriched the tremendous clinical college at Salerno University. He additionally based a zoological lawn. He left a e book on hawking, which indicates him to had been an acute observer of the behavior of birds, and he turned into one of the first Italians to jot down Italian verse. Italian poetry become indeed born at his court docket. He has been known as with the aid of an in a position author, "the primary of the moderns," and the phrase expresses aptly the unprejudiced detachment of his highbrow aspect.

A still greater putting intimation of the decay of the residing and maintaining forces of the papacy appeared when presently the Popes got here into war with the growing energy of the French King. During the lifetime of the Emperor Frederick II, Germany fell into disunion, and the French King started out to play the rôle of shield, supporter and rival to the Pope that had hitherto fallen to the Hohenstaufen Emperors. A collection of Popes pursued the policy of supporting the French monarchs. French princes had been installed inside the country of Sicily and Naples, with the assist and approval of Rome, and the French Kings noticed before them the possibility 283of restoring and ruling the Empire of Charlemagne. When, however, the German interregnum after the death of Frederick II, the final of the Hohenstaufens, got here to all give up and Rudolf of Habsburg turned into elected first Habsburg Emperor (1273), the policy of Rome began to fluctuate between France and Germany, veering about with the sympathies of each successive Pope. In the East in 1261 the Greeks recaptured Constantinople from the Latin emperors, and the founder of the brand new Greek dynasty, Michael Palæologus, Michael VIII, after a few unreal tentatives of reconciliation with the Pope, broke away from the Roman communion altogether, and with that, and the fall of the Latin kingdoms in Asia, the eastward ascendancy of the Popes got here to an stop.

COSTUMES OF THE BURGUNDIAN NOBILITY:
FLEMISH WORK OF THE
FIFTEENTH CENTURY

COSTUMES OF THE BURGUNDIAN NOBILITY:
FLEMISH WORK OF THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY

In 1294 Boniface VIII became Pope. He become an Italian, opposed to the French, and full of a feel of the terrific traditions and assignment of Rome. For a time he carried matters with a high hand. In 1300 he held a jubilee, and a significant multitude of pilgrims assembled in Rome. "So

great changed into the inflow of money into the papal treasury, that assistants had been kept busy with the rakes accumulating the 284 offerings that were deposited at the tomb of St. Peter.” [1] But this festival became a delusive triumph. Boniface came into warfare with the French King in 1302, and in 1303, as he was about to pronounce sentence of excommunication in opposition to that monarch, he changed into surprised and arrested in his own ancestral palace at Anagni, by means of Guillaume de Nogaret. This agent from the French King pressured an entrance into the palace, made his way into the bed room of the fearful Pope—he turned into lying in mattress with a cross in his arms—and heaped threats and insults upon him. The Pope turned into liberated an afternoon or so later through the townspeople, and back to Rome; however there he was seized upon and again made prisoner by the Orsini own family, and in some weeks’ time the bowled over and disappointed antique guy died a prisoner of their arms.

COSTUMES OF THE BURGUNDIAN NOBILITY:
FLEMISH WORK OF THE
FIFTEENTH CENTURY

COSTUMES OF THE BURGUNDIAN NOBILITY:
FLEMISH WORK OF THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY

This series is from casts inside the Victoria and Albert Museum of the unique brass statuettes within the Rijks Museum, Amsterdam

The human beings of Anagni did resent the primary outrage, and rose towards Nogaret to disencumber Boniface, however then Anagni become the Pope’s local metropolis. The vital factor to note is that the French King 285 on this difficult treatment of the head of Christendom changed into performing with the full approval of his human beings; he had summoned a council of the Three Estates of France (lords, church and commons) and received their consent earlier than proceeding to extremities. Neither in Italy, Germany nor England was there the slightest wellknown manifestation of disapproval at

this free handling of the sovereign pontiff. The idea of Christendom had decayed till its electricity over the minds of guys had long gone.

Throughout the fourteenth century the papacy did not anything to recover its moral sway. The next Pope elected, Clement V, turned into a Frenchman, the selection of King Philip of France. He in no way came to Rome. He installation his court docket within the city of Avignon, which then belonged no longer to France however to the papal See, though embedded in French territory, and there his successors remained till 1377, when Pope Gregory XI again to the Vatican palace in Rome. But Gregory XI did now not take the sympathies of the complete church with him. Many of the cardinals were of French origin and their habits and institutions were rooted deep at Avignon. When in 1378 Gregory XI died, and an Italian, Urban VI, turned into elected, these dissentient cardinals declared the election invalid, and elected every other Pope, the anti-Pope, Clement VII. This cut up is referred to as the Great Schism. The Popes remained in Rome, and all the anti-French powers, the Emperor, the King of England, Hungary, Poland and the North of Europe have been unswerving to them. The anti-Popes, on the other hand, endured in Avignon, and were supported by the King of France, his ally the King of Scotland, Spain, Portugal and numerous German princes. Each Pope excommunicated and cursed the adherents of his rival (1378-1417).

Is it any wonder that currently all over Europe human beings began to suppose for themselves in topics of religion?

The beginnings of the Franciscans and the Dominicans, which we have noted within the preceding chapters, had been but two among a few of the new forces that have been bobbing up in Christendom, either to preserve or shatter the church as its own wisdom may decide. Those two orders the church did

assimilate and use, though with a little violence inside the case of the previous. But different forces were more frankly disobedient and important. A century and a 1/2 later 286 got here Wycliffe (1320-1384). He turned into a found out Doctor at Oxford. Quite past due in his lifestyles he started out a chain of outspoken criticisms of the corruption of the clergy and the unwisdom of the church. He prepared a number of negative priests, the Wycliffites, to spread his thoughts at some stage in England; and simply so human beings must decide among the church and himself, he translated the Bible into English. He turned into a more found out and some distance abler man than either St. Francis or St. Dominic. He had supporters in high places and a exceptional following most of the human beings; and even though Rome raged in opposition to him, and ordered his imprisonment, he died a free guy. But the black and historical spirit that changed into main the Catholic Church to its destruction might now not allow his bones relaxation in the grave. By a decree of the Council of Constance in 1415, his remains have been ordered to be dug up and burnt, an order which changed into achieved on the command of Pope Martin V by Bishop Fleming in 1428. This desecration become not the act of a few remoted enthusiast; it was the authentic act of the church.

[1] J. H. Robinson.

287

XLVIII

THE MONGOL CONQUESTS

BUT inside the 13th century, even as this extraordinary and in the end ineffectual battle to unify Christendom under the rule

of thumb of the Pope turned into taking place in Europe, a ways greater momentous occasions were afoot upon the larger degree of Asia. A Turkish humans from the u . S . To the north of China rose unexpectedly to prominence inside the international's affairs, and done any such collection of conquests as has no parallel in records. These have been the Mongols. At the hole of the thirteenth century they have been a horde of nomadic horsemen, living very lots as their predecessors, the Huns, had carried out, subsisting chiefly upon meat and mare's milk and residing in tents of pores and skin. They had shaken themselves unfastened from Chinese dominion, and taken some of other Turkish tribes right into a army confederacy. Their valuable camp turned into at Karakorum in Mongolia.

At this time China turned into in a kingdom of department. The terrific dynasty of Tang had handed into decay with the aid of the tenth century, and after a segment of department into warring states, 3 principal empires, that of Kin inside the north with Peking as its capital and that of Sung within the south with a capital at Nanking, and Hsia within the centre, remain. In 1214 Jenghis Khan, the leader of the Mongol confederates, made struggle on the Kin Empire and captured Peking (1214). He then grew to become westward and conquered Western Turkestan, Persia, Armenia, India all the way down to Lahore, and South Russia as a ways as Kieff. He died grasp of a huge empire that reached from the Pacific to the Dnieper.

His successor, Ogdai Khan, continued this marvelous profession of conquest. His armies were organized to a completely high degree of performance; and that they had with them a brand new Chinese invention, gunpowder, which they used in small discipline weapons. He finished the conquest of the Kin Empire after which swept his hosts right across Asia to Russia (1235), an altogether incredible march. Kieff became 288destroyed in 1240, and almost all Russia became tributary to the Mongols. Poland become ravaged, and a combined army

of Poles and Germans changed into annihilated at the warfare of Liegnitz in Lower Silesia in 1241. The Emperor Frederick II does no longer appear to have made any great efforts to live the advancing tide.

Map: The Ottoman Empire before 1453

“It is only these days,” says Bury in his notes to Gibbon’s *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, “that European history has started to understand that the successes of the Mongol navy which overran Poland and occupied Hungary inside the spring of A.D. 1241 have been received with the aid of consummate approach and had been not due to a mere overwhelming superiority of numbers. But this reality has no longer but grow to be a count number of commonplace understanding; the vulgar opinion which represents the Tartars as a wild horde carrying all before them completely by means of their multitude, and galloping thru Eastern Europe without a strategic plan, speeding at all obstacles and overcoming them by mere weight, still prevails... .

“It turned into terrific how punctually and effectually the preparations had been executed in operations extending from the Lower Vistula to Transylvania. Such a marketing campaign was pretty past the 289strength of any European army of the time, and it was past the vision of any European commander. There became no standard in Europe, from Frederick II downward, who turned into no longer a tyro in strategy in comparison to Subutai. It ought to additionally be observed that the Mongols embarked upon the corporation with complete know-how of the political situation of Hungary and the condition of Poland—they had taken care to inform themselves by using a properly-prepared machine of spies; alternatively, the Hungarians and the Christian powers, like childish barbarians, knew rarely anything about their enemies.”

Map: The Empire of Jengis Khan at his loss of life (1227)

But although the Mongols had been effective at Liegnitz, they did not maintain their drive westward. They had been stepping into woodlands and hilly us of a, which did now not fit their strategies; and so that they turned southward and prepared to settle in Hungary, massacring or assimilating the kindred Magyar, while these had formerly massacred and assimilated the blended Scythians and Avars and Huns before them. From the Hungarian undeniable they would probable have made raids west and south because the Hungarians had executed inside the 9th century, the Avars inside the seventh and 8th and the Huns in the fifth. But Ogdai died suddenly, and in 1242 there was hassle 290approximately the succession, and recalled through this, the undefeated hosts of Mongols started to pour again across Hungary and Roumania toward the east.

Thereafter the Mongols focused their interest upon their Asiatic conquests. By the center of the 13th century that they had conquered the Sung Empire. Mangu Khan succeeded Ogdai Khan as Great Khan in 1251, and made his brother Kublai Khan governor of China. In 1280 Kublai Khan have been officially recognized Emperor of China, and so based the Yuan dynasty which lasted till 1368. While the final ruins of the Sung rule were taking place in China, some other brother of Mangu, Hulagu, was conquering Persia and Syria. The Mongols displayed a sour animosity to Islam at this time, and not only massacred the populace of Bagdad when they captured that city, however set to work to wreck the immemorial irrigation machine which had stored Mesopotamia incessantly rich and populous from the early days of Sumeria. From that point till our very own Mesopotamia has been a desolate tract of ruins, maintaining best a scanty population. Into Egypt the Mongols in no way penetrated; the Sultan of Egypt absolutely defeated an navy of Hulagu's in Palestine in 1260.

After that disaster the tide of Mongol victory ebbed. The dominions of the Great Khan fell into some of separate states. The Japanese Mongols became Buddhists, just like the Chinese; the western have become Moslim. The Chinese threw off the guideline of the Yuan dynasty in 1368, and set up the native Ming dynasty which flourished from 1368 to 1644. The Russians remained tributary to the Tartar hordes upon the south-east steppes until 1480, whilst the Grand Duke of Moscow repudiated his allegiance and laid the inspiration of current Russia.

291

TARTAR HORSEMEN

TARTAR HORSEMEN

(From a Chinese Print in the British Museum)

In the fourteenth century there was a quick revival of Mongol vigour underneath Timurlane, a descendant of Jengis Khan. He installed himself in Western Turkestan, assumed the identify of Grand Khan in 1369, and conquered from Syria to Delhi. He changed into the most savage and detrimental of all the Mongol conquerors. He set up an empire of desolation that did not live to tell the tale his loss of life. In 1505, but, a descendant of this Timur, an adventurer named Baber, got together an army with weapons and swept down upon the 292 plains of India. His grandson Akbar (1556-1605) completed his conquests, and this Mongol (or "Mogul" as the Arabs referred to as it) dynasty ruled in Delhi over the extra a part of India till the eighteenth century.

Map: The Ottoman Empire on the demise of Suleiman the Magnificent, 1566 <small>A.D.</small>

One of the results of the first fantastic sweep of Mongol conquest in the 13th century became to pressure a certain tribe of Turks, the Ottoman Turks, out of Turkestan into Asia

Minor. They extended and consolidated their energy in Asia Minor, crossed the Dardanelles and conquered Macedonia, Serbia and Bulgaria, until at last Constantinople remained like an island among the Ottoman dominions. In 1453 the Ottoman Sultan, Muhammad II, took Constantinople, attacking it from the European aspect with a first-rate number of weapons. This event precipitated excessive excitement in Europe and there was communicate of a crusade, however the day of the crusades became beyond.

In the path of the sixteenth century the Ottoman Sultans conquered Bagdad, Hungary, Egypt and most of North Africa, and their fleet made them masters of the Mediterranean. They very nearly took Vienna, and they exacted it tribute from the Emperor. There were however items to offset the overall ebb of Christian dominion ²⁹³within the fifteenth century. One changed into the recuperation of the independence of Moscow (1480); the opposite turned into the slow reconquest of Spain by means of the Christians. In 1492, Granada, the last Moslem kingdom inside the peninsula, fell to King Ferdinand of Aragon and his Queen Isabella of Castile.

But it changed into now not till as overdue as 1571 that the naval war of Lepanto broke the prick of the Ottomans, and restored the Mediterranean waters to Christian ascendancy.

294

XLIX

THE INTELLECTUAL REVIVAL OF THE EUROPEANS

THROUGHOUT the twelfth century there were many signs and symptoms that the European intelligence was improving courage and entertainment, and preparing to soak up once

more the highbrow corporations of the primary Greek clinical enquiries and such speculations as those of the Italian Lucretius. The causes of this revival were many and complex. The suppression of personal battle, the better standards of consolation and security that accompanied the crusades, and the stimulation of fellows's minds by using the stories of those expeditions were no doubt necessary initial situations. Trade turned into reviving; towns have been recovering ease and protection; the usual of training changed into arising in the church and spreading among laymen. The 13th and fourteenth centuries have been a length of developing, independent or quasi-unbiased towns; Venice, Florence, Genoa, Lisbon, Paris, Bruges, London, Antwerp, Hamburg, Nuremberg, Novgorod, Wisby and Bergen for example. They were all trading towns with many travelers, and where guys change and tour they speak and suppose. The polemics of the Popes and princes, the conspicuous savagery and wickedness of the persecution of heretics, were thrilling guys to doubt the authority of the church and query and speak fundamental matters.

We have visible how the Arabs had been the way of restoring Aristotle to Europe, and the way the sort of prince as Frederick II acted as a channel through which Arabic philosophy and technological know-how played upon the nascent European mind. Still more influential inside the stirring up of guys's ideas have been the Jews. Their very existence turned into a note of interrogation to the claims of the church. And sooner or later the secret, fascinating enquiries of the alchemists have been spreading some distance and wide and putting men to the petty, furtive and but fruitful resumption of experimental science.

295 And the stir in men's minds turned into in no way restrained now to the unbiased and well educated. The thoughts of the common man became awake within the world because it had by no means been before in all the enjoy of mankind. In spite of priest and persecution, Christianity does

appear to have carried a mental ferment anyplace its teaching reached. It set up an instantaneous relation among the judgment of right and wrong of the person man and the God of Righteousness, in order that now if want arose he had the braveness to form his personal judgment upon prince or prelate or creed.

As early as the 11th century philosophical dialogue had all started once more in Europe, and there had been superb and developing universities at Paris, Oxford, Bologna and other centres. There medieval "schoolmen" took up again and thrashed out a series of questions upon the cost and meaning of phrases that had been a vital initial to clear thinking within the clinical age that was to observe. And status via himself due to his different genius was Roger William Maxwell Aitken (circa 1210 to circa 1293), a Franciscan of Oxford, the father of contemporary experimental technology. His call deserves a prominence in our history second simplest to that of Aristotle.

His writings are one lengthy tirade against lack of know-how. He informed his age it changed into ignorant, an exceedingly bold factor to do. Nowadays a person might also inform the world it's miles as silly as it's far solemn, that each one its strategies are still childish and clumsy and its dogmas childish assumptions, with out lots bodily danger; but those peoples of the center a long time when they had been not in reality being massacred or ravenous or death of pestilence, had been passionately convinced of the expertise, the completeness and finality of their ideals, and disposed to resent any reflections upon them very bitterly. Roger publisher 1st baron verulam's writings were like a flash of mild in a profound darkness. He combined his attack upon the lack of understanding of his instances with a wealth of thought for the increase of knowledge. In his passionate insistence upon the want of experiment and of gathering information, the spirit of Aristotle lives once more in him. "Experiment, test," that is the burthen of Roger Beaverbrook.

Yet of Aristotle himself Roger 1st baron beaverbrook fell foul. He fell foul of him due to the fact men, in preference to going through information boldly, sat in rooms and pored over the terrible Latin translations which have been then all that changed into 296available of the master. "If I had my way," he wrote, in his intemperate style, "I have to burn all of the books of Aristotle, for the observe of them can most effective result in a lack of time, produce errors, and boom lack of information," a sentiment that Aristotle might probably have echoed should he have returned to a international wherein his works have been not a lot read as worshipped—and that, as Roger Beaverbrook showed, in these maximum abominable translations.

AN EARLY PRINTING PRESS

AN EARLY PRINTING PRESS

(From an antique print)

297Throughout his books, a touch disguised with the aid of the need of seeming to square all of it with orthodoxy for fear of the jail and worse, Roger Baron Verulam shouted to mankind, "Cease to be dominated via dogmas and government; have a look at the world!" Four leader resources of lack of knowledge he denounced; recognize for authority, custom, the experience of the ignorant crowd, and the vain, proud unteachableness of our tendencies. Overcome however these, and a international of power would open to guys: —

"Machines for navigating are viable without rowers, so that notable ships acceptable to river or ocean, guided via one guy, may be borne with more speed than if they had been complete of men. Likewise vehicles can be made in order that without a draught animal they may be moved cum impetu inestimable, as we deem the scythed chariots to had been from which antiquity fought. And flying machines are feasible, so that a

man may take a seat inside the center turning some device via which synthetic wings may additionally beat the air within the way of a flying chook.”

So Roger Baron Verulam wrote, but three more centuries had been to elapse before guys started any systematic tries to discover the hidden stores of electricity and interest he found out so truly existed below the stupid surface of human affairs.

But the Saracenic world now not simplest gave Christendom the stimulus of its philosophers and alchemists; it also gave it paper. It is scarcely too much to say that paper made the highbrow revival of Europe viable. Paper originated in China, wherein its use probable is going back to the second century B.C. In 751 the Chinese made an assault upon the Arab Moslems in Samarkand; they had been repulsed, and a number of the prisoners taken from them had been a few professional papermakers, from whom the art became learnt. Arabic paper manuscripts from the 9th century onward still exist. The manufacture entered Christendom both through Greece or by way of the seize of Moorish paper-turbines in the course of the Christian reconquest of Spain. But under the Christian Spanish the product deteriorated lamentably. Good paper become not made in Christian Europe until the end of the 13th century, after which it changed into Italy which led the world. Only by way of the fourteenth century did the manufacture reach Germany, and now not until the give up of that century turned into it plentiful and 298cheap enough for the printing of books to be a workable commercial enterprise proposition.

Thereupon printing followed naturally and necessarily, for printing is the most apparent of innovations, and the highbrow existence of the world entered upon a new and a ways extra vigorous segment. It ceased to be a bit trickle from thoughts to mind; it became a broad flood, in which thousands and currently scores and loads of hundreds of minds participated.

One instantaneous end result of this success of printing become the advent of an abundance of Bibles within the world. Another was a cheapening of school-books. The know-how of reading spread rapidly. There become not most effective a high-quality boom of books in the international, however the books that have been now made were plainer to read and so less complicated to apprehend. Instead of toiling at a crabbed text arid then questioning over its importance, readers now may want to think unimpeded as they read. With this increase inside the facility of analyzing, the analyzing public grew. The e book ceased to be a exceptionally embellished toy or a pupil's mystery. People started out to write books to be study as well as looked at by ordinary human beings. They wrote inside the normal language and now not in Latin. With the fourteenth century the actual history of the European literature begins.

So far we had been dealing simplest with the Saracenic share in the European revival. Let us turn now to the influence of the Mongol conquests. They inspired the geographical imagination of Europe exceedingly. For a time beneath the Great Khan, all Asia and Western Europe enjoyed an open sex; all of the roads had been temporarily open, and representatives of each kingdom regarded on the court of Karakorum. The barriers among Europe and Asia set up by means of the non secular feud of Christianity and Islam had been lowered. Great hopes were entertained by the papacy for the conversion of the Mongols to Christianity. Their only faith to date have been Shumanism, a primitive paganism. Envoys of the Pope, Buddhist monks from India, Parisian and Italian and Chinese artificers, Byzantine and Armenian merchants, mingled with Arab officials and Persian and Indian astronomers and mathematicians on the Mongol court docket. We listen too much in history of the campaigns and massacres of the Mongols, and now not enough in their curiosity and choice for learning. Not possibly as an originative human beings, however as transmitters 299of expertise and approach their

have an effect on upon the world's history has been very great. And the entirety you can actually research of the indistinct and romantic personalities of Jengis or Kublai tends to verify the affect that those guys were at the least as knowledge and creative monarchs as both that flamboyant but egotistical determine Alexander the Great or that raiser of political ghosts, that lively however illiterate theologian Charlemagne.

One of the maximum exciting of those visitors to the Mongol Court turned into a certain Venetian, Marco Polo, who afterwards set down his story in a book. He went to China about 1272 along with his father and uncle, who had already once made the adventure. The Great Khan had been deeply inspired by using the elder Polos; they have been the first guys of the "Latin" peoples he had visible; and he sent them again with enquiries for teachers and discovered guys who ought to explain Christianity to him, and for various different European matters that had aroused his curiosity. Their visit with Marco changed into their 2d go to.

ANCIENT BRONZE FIGURE FROM BENIN, W. AFRICA

ANCIENT BRONZE FIGURE FROM BENIN, W. AFRICA

Note proof in apparel of expertise of early European explorers
(In the British Museum)

The 3 Polos commenced through manner of Palestine and now not by way of the Crimea, as of their preceding excursion. They had with them a gold tablet and other warning signs from the Great Khan that need to have substantially facilitated their adventure. The Great Khan had asked for a few oil from the lamp that burns inside the Holy Sepulchre at Jerusalem; and so thither they first went, and then by means of way of Cilicia into Armenia. They went to this point north due to the fact the Sultan of Egypt became raiding the Mongol domain names at the moment. Thence they came through manner of Mesopotamia to Ormuz at the Persian Gulf, as though they

contemplated a sea voyage. At Ormuz they met merchants from India. For a few purpose they did not take deliver, but instead grew to become northward thru the Persian deserts, and so by means of way of Balkh over three hundredthe Pamir to Kashgar, and through way of Kotan and the Lob Nor into the Hwang-ho valley and on to Pekin. At Pekin was the Great Khan, and that they have been hospitably entertained.

ANOTHER ANCIENT NEGRO BRONZE OF A EUROPEAN

ANOTHER ANCIENT NEGRO BRONZE OF A EUROPEAN

(In the British Museum)

Marco particularly thrilled Kublai; he turned into younger and smart, and it's miles clean he had mastered the Tartar language very thoroughly. He turned into given an reliable role and despatched on several missions, mainly in south-west China. The tale he had to tell of vast stretches of smiling and rich country, "all of the manner awesome hostelries for guests," and "high-quality vineyards, fields, and gardens," of "many abbeys" of Buddhist monks, of manufactures of "cloth of silk and gold and many best taffetas," a "steady succession of towns and boroughs," and so on, first roused the incredulity and then fired the imagination of all Europe. He informed of Burmah, and of its exceptional armies with hundreds of elephants, and how these animals had been defeated with the aid of the Mongol bowmen, and also of the Mongol conquest of Pegu. He instructed of Japan, and significantly exaggerated the amount of gold in that u . S . A .. For 3 years Marco ruled the metropolis of Yang-chow as governor, and he probably impressed the Chinese inhabitants as being little greater of a foreigner than any Tartar could were. He may additionally have been despatched on a assignment to India. Chinese statistics mention a positive Polo connected to the imperial council in 1277, a totally valuable affirmation of the overall truth of the Polo story.

The ebook of Marco Polo's travels produced a profound effect upon the European imagination. The European literature, and mainly the European romance of the fifteenth century, echoes with the names in Marco Polo's tale, with Cathay (North China) and Cambulac (Pekin) and so forth.

EARLY ITALIAN ENGRAVING OF A SAILING SHIP

EARLY ITALIAN ENGRAVING OF A SAILING SHIP

(In the British Museum)

Two centuries later, some of the readers of the Travels of Marco Polo become a positive Genoese mariner, Christopher Columbus, who conceived the exquisite concept of crusing westward round the sector to China. In Seville there is a duplicate of the Travels with marginal notes with the aid of Columbus. There had been many motives why the notion of a Genoese should be grew to become in this course. Until its capture by the Turks in 1453 Constantinople were an independent buying and selling mart among the Western international and the East, and the Genoese had traded there freely. But the "Latin" Venetians, the sour rivals of the Genoese, have been the allies and helpers of the Turks in opposition to the Greeks, and with the coming of the Turks Constantinople turned an unfriendly face upon Genoese change. The long forgotten discovery that the world turned into round had progressively resumed its sway over guys's minds. The concept of going westward to China was consequently a reasonably apparent one. It was recommended by matters. The mariner's compass had now been invented and men have been not left to the mercy of a first-class night and the celebrities to determine the path wherein they were crusing, and the Normans, Catalonians and Genoese and Portuguese had already driven out into the Atlantic as far because the Canary Isles, Madeira and the Azores.

Yet Columbus determined many difficulties earlier than he should get ships to place his idea to the test. He went from one European Court to another. Finally at Granada, just received from the Moors, he secured the patronage of Ferdinand and Isabella, and was capable of set out throughout the unknown ocean in three small ships. After a voyage of months and nine days he came to a land which he believed to be India, however which turned into honestly a new continent, whose distinct existence the vintage global had in no way hitherto suspected. He lower back to Spain with gold, cotton, atypical beasts and birds, and wild- eyed painted Indians to be baptized. They were referred to as Indians due to the fact, to the stop of his days, he believed that this land he had determined changed into India. Only in the path of numerous years did guys start to realise that the entire new continent of America become added to the arena's resources.

The success of Columbus stimulated remote places enterprise notably. In 1497 the Portuguese sailed spherical Africa to India, and in 1515 there have been Portuguese ships in Java. In 1519 Magellan, a Portuguese sailor in Spanish employment, sailed out of Seville westward with five ships, of which one, the Vittoria, got here back up the river to Seville in 1522, the first ship that had ever circumnavigated the sector. Thirty-one guys had been aboard her, survivors of -hundred-and- 80 who had started. Magellan himself have been killed in the Philippine Isles.

Printed paper books, a new awareness of the round global as a factor altogether achievable, a new imaginative and prescient of weird lands, peculiar animals and vegetation, peculiar manners and customs, discoveries overseas and within the skies and in the approaches and materials of lifestyles burst upon the European mind. The Greek classics, buried and forgotten for thus 303lengthy, were quickly being printed and studied, and had been colouring guys's mind with the desires of Plato and the traditions of an age of republican freedom and

dignity. The Roman dominion had first delivered law and order to Western Europe, and the Latin Church had restored it; but beneath both Pagan and Catholic Rome curiosity and innovation had been subordinate to and restricted by means of enterprise. The reign of the Latin thoughts turned into now drawing to an quit. Between the 13th and the sixteenth century the European Aryans, thanks to the stimulating affect of Semite and Mongol and the rediscovery of the Greek classics, broke faraway from the Latin culture and rose once more to the intellectual and material management of mankind.

304

L

THE REFORMATION OF THE LATIN CHURCH

THE Latin Church itself changed into noticeably tormented by this mental rebirth. It became dismembered; or even the portion that survived become drastically renewed.

We have instructed how nearly the church got here to the autocratic management of all Christendom in the eleventh and twelfth centuries, and how within the fourteenth and 15th its energy over guys's minds and affairs declined. We have described how famous religious enthusiasm which had in in advance a while been its guide and energy was grew to become towards it by means of its satisfaction, persecutions and centralization, and the way the insidious scepticism of Frederick II bore fruit in a developing insubordination of the princes. The Great Schism had decreased its spiritual and political prestige to negligible proportions. The forces of rebel struck it now from each aspects.

The teachings of the Englishman Wycliffe spread extensively at some stage in Europe. In 1398 a discovered Czech, John Huss, delivered a series of lectures upon Wycliffe's teachings in the college of Prague. This coaching unfold hastily past the educated class and aroused fantastic popular enthusiasm. In 1414-18 a Council of the whole church become held at Constance to settle the Great Schism. Huss changed into invited to this Council below promise of a safe behavior from the emperor, seized, put on trial for heresy and burnt alive (1415). So far from tranquillizing the Bohemian people, this led to an riot of the Hussites in that us of a, the primary of a chain of spiritual wars that inaugurated the ruin-up of Latin Christendom. Against this rebel Pope Martin V, the Pope specifically elected at Constance as the top of a reunited Christendom, preached a Crusade.

Five Crusades in all had been launched upon this robust little humans and they all failed. All the unemployed ruffianism of Europe turned into 305became upon Bohemia in the fifteenth century, simply as within the 13th it were grew to become upon the Waldenses. But the Bohemian Czechs, not like the Waldenses, believed in armed resistance. The Bohemian Crusade dissolved and streamed far from the battlefield on the sound of the Hussites' waggons and the distant chanting of their troops; it did now not even wait to fight (war of Domazlice, 1431). In 1436 an agreement changed into patched up with the Hussites by means of a new Council of the church at Basle in which among the unique objections to Latin practice had been conceded.

PORTRAIT OF LUTHER

PORTRAIT OF LUTHER

(From an early German engraving inside the British Museum)

In the 15th century a incredible pestilence had produced a good deal social disorganization all through Europe. There had

been intense distress and discontent many of the not unusual human beings, and peasant risings against the landlords and the wealthy in England and France. After the Hussite Wars these peasant insurrections accelerated in gravity in Germany and took on a spiritual man or woman. Printing came in as a power upon this improvement. By the center of the fifteenth century there have been printers at work with movable kind 306 in Holland and the Rhineland. The artwork unfold to Italy and England, in which Caxton become printing in Westminster in 1477. The immediately consequence become a great increase and distribution of Bibles, and substantially improved centers for great famous controversies. The European global became a international of readers, to an quantity that had in no way came about to any network inside the beyond. And this unexpected irrigation of the overall thoughts with clearer ideas and greater on hand facts happened just at a time when the church was burdened and divided and no longer in a function to protect itself efficiently, and when many princes have been searching out method to weaken its maintain upon the substantial wealth it claimed in their dominions.

In Germany the assault upon the church collected spherical the persona of an ex-monk, Martin Luther (1483-1546), who appeared in Wittenberg in 1517 offering disputations in opposition to various orthodox doctrines and practices. At first he disputed in Latin in the style of the Schoolmen. Then he took up the brand new weapon of the broadcast word and scattered his perspectives far and huge in German addressed to the ordinary human beings. An attempt turned into made to suppress him as Huss were suppressed, however the printing press had changed conditions and he had too many open and secret pals the various German princes for this destiny to overhaul him.

For now in this age of multiplying ideas and weakened religion there were many rulers who saw their benefit in breaking the religious ties between their people and Rome.

They sought to make themselves in individual the heads of a greater nationalized religion. England, Scotland, Sweden, Norway, Denmark, North Germany and Bohemia, one after every other, separated themselves from the Roman Communion. They have remained separated ever when you consider that.

A MAJOLICA DISH PAINTED IN COLOURS

A MAJOLICA DISH PAINTED IN COLOURS

An allegory of the Church positive over heretics and infidels. Italian (Urbino), dated 1543

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

The numerous princes concerned cared little or no for the ethical and intellectual freedom of their topics. They used the religious doubts and insurgence in their peoples to bolster them towards Rome, but they tried to keep a grip upon the famous movement as soon as that rupture was executed and a country wide church installation below the manage of the crown. But there has continually been a curious power in the coaching of Jesus, a right away enchantment to righteousness and a person's self-respect over each loyalty and each subordination, lay or ecclesiastical. None of those princely churches broke off without additionally breaking off some of fragmentary sects that might admit the intervention of neither prince nor Pope among a person and his God. In England and Scotland, for instance, there was some of sects who now held firmly to the Bible as their one manual in life and notion. They refused the disciplines of a country church. In England those dissentients were the Non-conformists, who performed a very massive part in the politics of that usa inside the 17th and eighteenth centuries. In England they carried their objection to a princely head to the church thus far as to decapitate King Charles I (1649), and for eleven wealthy years England changed into a republic under Non-conformist rule.

The breaking away of this massive section of Northern Europe from Latin Christendom is what's normally spoken of as the Reformation. But the surprise and pressure of those losses produced changes perhaps as profound inside the Roman Church itself. The church became reorganized and a brand new spirit came into its life. One of the dominant figures on this revival was a young Spanish soldier, Inigo Lopez de Recalde, higher regarded to the sector as St. Ignatius of Loyola. After some romantic beginnings he have become a priest (1538) and was accredited to discovered the Society of Jesus, an immediate try to bring the generous and chivalrous traditions of army discipline into the provider of faith. This Society of Jesus, the Jesuits, have become one of the finest coaching and missionary societies the arena has ever seen. It carried Christianity to India, China and America. It arrested the rapid disintegration of the Roman Church. It raised the usual of schooling all through the complete Catholic global; it raised the extent of Catholic intelligence and quickened the Catholic judgment of right and wrong anywhere; it stimulated Protestant Europe to aggressive instructional efforts. The vigorous and competitive Roman Catholic Church we know to-day is largely the product of this Jesuit revival.

309

LI

THE EMPEROR CHARLES V

THE Holy Roman Empire got here to a kind of climax within the reign of the Emperor Charles V. He was one of the most wonderful monarchs that Europe has ever seen. For a time he had the air of being the finest monarch considering the fact that Charlemagne.

His greatness became not of his personal making. It became in large part the introduction of his grandfather, the Emperor Maximilian I (1459- 1519). Some families have fought, others have intrigued their manner to international power; the Habsburgs married their manner. Maximilian started out his career with Austria, Styria, part of Alsace and other districts, the authentic Habsburg patrimony; he married—the lady's call scarcely topics to us—the Netherlands and Burgundy. Most of Burgundy slipped from him after his first spouse's death, however the Netherlands he held. Then he attempted unsuccessfully to marry Brittany. He have become Emperor in succession to his father, Frederick III, in 1493, and married the duchy of Milan. Finally he married his son to the susceptible-minded daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella, the Ferdinand and Isabella of Columbus, who now not only reigned over a freshly united Spain and over Sardinia and the dominion of the two Sicilies, but over all America west of Brazil. So it turned into that this Charles V, his grandson, inherited most of the American continent and among a third and a 1/2 of what the Turks had left of Europe. He succeeded to the Netherlands in 1506. When his grandfather Ferdinand died in 1516, he became almost king of the Spanish dominions, his mom being imbecile; and his grandfather Maximilian demise in 1519, he became in 1520 elected Emperor on the nevertheless comparatively soft age of twenty.

He become a honest young guy with a not very intelligent face, a thick top lip and a protracted clumsy chin. He determined himself in a international of younger and vigorous personalities. It became an age of super younger 310monarchs. Francis I had succeeded to the French throne in 1515 at the age of twenty-one, Henry VIII had emerge as King of England in 1509 at eighteen. It was the age of Baber in India (1526-1530) and Suleiman the Magnificent in Turkey (1520), both particularly capable monarchs, and the Pope Leo X (1513) became also a completely prominent Pope. The Pope and Francis I attempted to save you the election of Charles as

Emperor due to the fact they dreaded the concentration of so much power within the arms of 1 guy. Both Francis I and Henry VIII offered themselves to the imperial electors. But there was now a long established culture of Habsburg Emperors (in view that 1273), and some active bribery secured the election for Charles.

At first the younger guy become very plenty a marvelous puppet inside the fingers of his ministers. Then slowly he commenced to claim himself and take manage. He started out to understand some thing of the threatening complexities of his exalted function. It become a function as unsound because it was splendid.

From the very outset of his reign he become confronted by way of the scenario created via Luther's agitations in Germany. The Emperor had one motive for siding with the reformers within the opposition of the Pope to his election. But he were delivered up in Spain, that maximum Catholic of countries, and he determined against Luther. So he came into conflict with the Protestant princes and specially the Elector of Saxony. He discovered himself within the presence of an opening rift that become to split the outworn material of Christendom into two contending camps. His attempts to close that rift have been strenuous and honest and useless. There become an extensive peasant rise up in Germany which interwove with the general political and religious disturbance. And those internal problems had been complicated by using assaults upon the Empire from east and west alike. On the west of Charles was his lively rival, Francis I; to the east become the ever advancing Turk, who became now in Hungary, in alliance with Francis and clamouring for positive arrears of tribute from the Austrian dominions. Charles had the cash and navy of Spain at his disposal, however it became extraordinarily difficult to get any effective help in cash from Germany. His social and political issues had been complicated

by using financial distresses. He was compelled to ruinous borrowing.

311

THE CHARLES V PORTRAIT BY TITIAN

THE CHARLES V PORTRAIT BY TITIAN

(In the Gallery del Prado, Madrid)

Photo: Anderson

312 On the complete, Charles, in alliance with Henry VIII, turned into successful against Francis I and the Turk. Their leader battlefield changed into North Italy; the generalship was dull on each facets; their advances and retreats depended mainly on the arrival of reinforcements. The German navy invaded France, failed to take Marseilles, fell lower back into Italy, lost Milan, and was besieged in Pavia. Francis I made a protracted and unsuccessful siege of Pavia, changed into caught by sparkling German forces, defeated, wounded and taken prisoner. But thereupon the Pope and Henry VIII, still haunted through the fear of his achieving immoderate electricity, grew to become against Charles. The German troops in Milan, underneath the Constable of Bourbon, being unpaid, compelled rather than accompanied their commander into a raid upon Rome. They stormed the city and pillaged it (1527). The Pope took refuge in the Castle of St. Angelo at the same time as the looting and slaughter went on. He offered off the German troops at remaining by using the fee of 4 hundred thousand ducats. Ten years of such confused preventing impoverished all Europe. At final the Emperor discovered himself successful in Italy. In 1530, he turned into topped through the Pope—he became the remaining German Emperor to be so crowned—at Bologna.

Meanwhile the Turks had been making fantastic headway in Hungary. They had defeated and killed the king of Hungary in 1526, they held Buda-Pesth, and in 1529 Suleiman the

Magnificent very nearly took Vienna. The Emperor became greatly worried by way of these advances, and did his utmost to force back the Turks, however he found the best problem in getting the German princes to unite even with this ambitious enemy upon their very borders. Francis I remained implacable for a time, and there was a brand new French warfare; but in 1538 Charles gained his rival over to a greater friendly mindset after ravaging the south of France. Francis and Charles then shaped an alliance in opposition to the Turk. But the Protestant princes, the German princes who have been resolved to interrupt far from Rome, had formed a league, the Schmalkaldic League, towards the Emperor, and inside the vicinity of a tremendous campaign to recover Hungary for Christendom Charles had to turn his mind to the collection internal war in Germany. Of that war he saw only the opening warfare. It became a battle, a sanguinary irrational bickering of princes, for ascendancy, now flaming into war and destruction, now sinking lower back to intrigues and diplomacies; it was a snake's sack of princely rules that was to go on writhing incurably proper into the nineteenth century and to waste and desolate Central Europe time and again.

The Emperor in no way appears to have grasped the authentic forces at work in these gathering issues. He became for his time and station an incredibly worth man, and he seems to have taken the non secular dissensions that had been tearing Europe into warring fragments as proper theological variations. He collected diets and councils in futile tries at reconciliation. Formulæ and confessions were tried over. The scholar of German records must battle with the info of the Religious Peace of Nuremberg, the agreement at the Diet of Ratisbon, the Interim of Augsburg, and the like. Here we do but point out them as info within the concerned life of this culminating Emperor. As a count of reality, hardly one of the multifarious princes and rulers in Europe seems to have been appearing in precise faith. The big religious problem of the sector, the desire of the not unusual people for fact and social

righteousness, the spreading information of the time, all the ones matters have been simply counters in the imaginations of princely diplomacy. Henry VIII of England, who had began his career with a e book towards heresy, and who had been rewarded by means of the Pope with the name of “Defender of the Faith,” being annoying to divorce his first spouse in favour of a young lady named Anne Boleyn, and wishing also to loot the large wealth of the church in England, joined the business enterprise of Protestant princes in 1530. Sweden, Denmark and Norway had already long gone over to the Protestant side.

The German spiritual battle started in 1546, some months after the loss of life of Martin Luther. We want no longer hassle about the incidents of the marketing campaign. The Protestant Saxon military changed into badly crushed at Lochau. By some thing much like a breach of religion Philip of Hesse, the Emperor’s chief closing antagonist, become caught and imprisoned, and the Turks have been offered off via the promise of an annual tribute. In 1547, to the exceptional comfort of the Emperor, Francis I died. So by using 1547 Charles got to a sort of settlement, and made his closing efforts to effect peace where there was no peace. In 1552 all Germany became at conflict again, best a precipitate flight from Innsbruck 314 saved Charles from seize, and in 1552, with the treaty of Passau, came another risky equilibrium

Such is the quick define of the politics of the Empire for thirty- years. It is interesting to observe how completely the European mind turned into concentrated upon the battle for European ascendancy. Neither Turks, French, English nor Germans had but found any political hobby within the amazing continent of America, nor any importance inside the new sea routes to Asia. Great matters had been taking place in America; Cortez with a mere handful of fellows had conquered the wonderful Neolithic empire of Mexico for Spain, Pizarro had crossed the Isthmus of Panama (1530) and subjugated every other marvel-land, Peru. But as but these

events supposed no extra to Europe than a useful and stimulating inflow of silver to the Spanish treasury.

It was after the treaty of Passau that Charles started to display his exceptional originality of mind. He was now totally bored and disenchanted by means of his imperial greatness. A feel of the insupportable futility of those European rivalries came upon him. He had in no way been of a totally sound charter, he changed into obviously indolent and he become struggling significantly from gout. He abdicated. He remodeled all his sovereign rights in Germany to his brother Ferdinand, and Spain and the Netherlands he resigned to his son Philip. Then in a kind of awesome dudgeon he retired to a monastery at Yuste, the various o.K.And chestnut forests in the hills to the north of the Tagus valley. There he died in 1558.

Much has been written in a sentimental vein of this retirement, this renunciation of the sector by using this tired majestic Titan, international-weary, looking for in an austere solitude his peace with God. But his retreat become neither solitary nor austere; he had with him nearly a hundred and fifty attendants: his established order had all the splendour and indulgences without the fatigues or a court docket, and Philip II changed into a dutiful son to whom his father's advice changed into a command.

INTERIOR OF ST. PETER'S, ROME, SHOWING THE HIGH ALTAR

INTERIOR OF ST. PETER'S, ROME, SHOWING THE HIGH ALTAR

Photo: Alinari

And if Charles had misplaced his residing hobby inside the management of European affairs, there have been other motives of a extra instant kind to stir him. Says Prescott: "In the almost daily correspondence among Quixada, or Gaztelu,

and the Secretary of State at Valladolid, there is scarcely a letter that does not flip extra or less at the Emperor's ingesting or his illness. The one appears naturally to observe, 315like a strolling statement, on the alternative. It is rare that such subjects have shaped the burden of communications with the department of country. It need to had been no smooth matter for the secretary to preserve his gravity in the perusal of despatches wherein politics and gastronomy had been so surprisingly combined collectively. The courier from Valladolid to Lisbon turned into ordered to make a detour, so that you can take Jarandilla in his direction, and convey materials to the royal table. On 316Thursdays he became to deliver fish to serve for the jour maigre that changed into to observe. The trout inside the neighbourhood Charles notion too small, so others of a bigger size had been to be despatched from Valladolid. Fish of every kind was to his flavor, as, certainly, changed into something that in its nature or conduct at all approached to fish. Eels, frogs, oysters, occupied an important location within the royal bill of fare. Potted fish, specifically anchovies, determined super favour with him; and he regretted that he had not added a better deliver of those from the Low Countries. On an eel-pasty he especially doted.” ... [1]

In 1554 Charles had acquired a bull from Pope Julius III granting him a dispensation from fasting, and allowing him to break his fast early within the morning even when he become to take the sacrament.

Eating and doctoring! It turned into a go back to elemental things. He had in no way received the dependancy of reading, however he would be study aloud to at food after the fashion of Charlemagne, and would make what one narrator describes as a “candy and heavenly remark.” He also amused himself with mechanical toys, by using paying attention to music or sermons, and with the aid of getting to the imperial enterprise that still came drifting in to him. The loss of life of the

Empress, to whom he turned into greatly connected, had turned his thoughts closer to religion, which in his case took a punctilious and ceremonial shape; every Friday in Lent he scourged himself with the rest of the priests with such precise will as to attract blood. These exercises and the gout launched a bigotry in Charles that had hitherto been restrained by way of concerns of policy. The look of Protestant teaching close at hand in Valladolid roused him to fury. "Tell the grand inquisitor and his council from me to be at their posts, and to put the awl at the basis of the evil earlier than it spreads similarly." . . . He expressed a doubt whether it would not be well, in so black an affair, to dispense with the regular direction of justice, and to reveal no mercy; "lest the crook, if pardoned, must have the possibility of repeating his crime." He recommended, for instance, his very own mode or proceeding inside the Netherlands, "where all who remained obstinate in their errors have been burned alive, and people who have been admitted to penitence have been beheaded."

And nearly symbolical of his area and function in records turned into his 317preoccupation with funerals. He seems to have had an instinct that something super changed into lifeless in Europe and sorely needed burial, that there has been a want to write Finis, late. He now not most effective attended each actual funeral that turned into celebrated at Yuste, however he had offerings carried out for the absent useless, he held a funeral service in reminiscence of his wife on the anniversary of her death, and in the end he celebrated his personal obsequies.

"The chapel changed into hung with black, and the blaze of hundreds of wax-lighting became scarcely sufficient to dispel the darkness. The brethren of their conventual get dressed, and all of the Emperor's household clad in deep mourning, collected spherical a huge catafalque, shrouded also in black, which had been raised within the centre of the chapel. The provider for the burial of the dead become then carried out;

and, amidst the dismal wail of the priests, the prayers ascended for the departed spirit, that it might be acquired into the mansions of the blessed. The sorrowful attendants have been melted to tears, because the image of their grasp's demise turned into offered to their minds—or they have been touched, it is able to be, with compassion with the aid of this pitiable display of weak point. Charles, muffled in a darkish mantle, and bearing a lighted candle in his hand, mingled together with his family, the spectator of his own obsequies; and the doleful rite turned into concluded by his setting the taper inside the palms of the priest, in sign of his surrendering up his soul to the Almighty.”

Within two months of this masquerade he changed into lifeless. And the short greatness of the Holy Roman Empire died with him. His realm turned into already divided among his brother and his son. The Holy Roman Empire struggled on certainly to the times of Napoleon I but as an invalid and loss of life aspect. To at the moment its unburied culture nevertheless poisons the political air.

[1] Prescott's Appendix to Robertson's History of Charles V.

318

LII

THE AGE OF POLITICAL EXPERIMENTS; OF GRAND
MONARCHY AND PARLIAMENTS AND
REPUBLICANISM IN EUROPE

THE Latin Church turned into broken, the Holy Roman
Empire was in severe decay; the history of Europe from the

outlet of the 16th century onward is a story of peoples feeling their manner darkly to a few new technique of government, better adapted to the brand new conditions that have been springing up. In the Ancient World, over long periods of time, there have been modifications of dynasty or even modifications of ruling race and language, but the form of government through monarch and temple remained fairly strong, and nevertheless more solid was the normal way of dwelling. In this contemporary Europe because the sixteenth century the dynastic changes are unimportant, and the interest of history lies in the extensive and growing form of experiments in political and social organization.

The political history of the world from the 16th century onward become, we've said, an effort, a in large part subconscious effort, of mankind to conform its political and social strategies to sure new situations that had now arisen. The attempt to conform become complicated by using the fad that the situations themselves were changing with a steadily increasing rapidity. The model, specially subconscious and nearly constantly unwilling (for man in standard hates voluntary alternate), has lagged more and more behind the alterations in situations. From the 16th century onward the history of mankind is a tale of political and social establishments turning into an increasing number of evidently misfits, much less at ease and more vexatious, and of the sluggish reluctant realization of the want for a aware and planned reconstruction of the whole scheme of human societies inside the face of desires and possibilities new to all the former studies of existence.

What are these adjustments within the conditions of human lifestyles that have disorganized that stability of empire, priest, peasant and trader, with 319periodic refreshment by means of barbaric conquest, that has held human affairs within the Old World in a form of working rhythm for extra than 100 centuries?

They are manifold and diverse, for human affairs are multitudinously complicated; but the essential modifications seem all to turn upon one purpose, specifically the increase and extension of a information of the character of factors, starting to begin with in small organizations of shrewd human beings and spreading at the start slowly, and within the last 5 hundred years very hastily, to larger and larger proportions of the general populace.

But there has also been a outstanding trade in human conditions due to a change within the spirit of human existence. This trade has long past on aspect through aspect with the boom and extension of knowledge, and is subtly related with it. There has been an increasing disposition to deal with a life based at the common and extra simple dreams and gratifications as unsatisfactory, and to seek courting with and carrier and participation in a bigger existence. This is the not unusual feature of all of the splendid religions which have spread all through the world within the last twenty extraordinary centuries, Buddhism, Christianity and Islam alike. They have had to do with the spirit of man in a way that the older religions did now not need to do. They are forces pretty distinct in their nature and effect from the old fetishistic blood-sacrifice religions of priest and temple that they've in element changed and in component replaced. They have gradually advanced a self-appreciate in the man or woman and a feel of participation and responsibility within the common worries of mankind that did not exist the various populations of the sooner civilizations.

The first massive trade within the situations of political and social life changed into the simplification and extended use of writing in the historical civilizations which made large empires and wider political understandings plausible and inevitable. The subsequent movement forward got here with

the introduction of the horse, and in a while of the camel as a method of transport, using wheeled vehicles, the extension of roads and the extended navy efficiency because of the discovery of terrestrial iron. Then followed the profound financial disturbances because of the device of coined cash and the exchange in the nature of debt, proprietorship and exchange because of this convenient however dangerous conference. The empires grew in size and range, and 320 men's ideas grew likewise to correspond with this stuff. Came the disappearance of local gods, the age of theocrasia, and the teaching of the great global religions. Came also the beginnings of reasoned and recorded history and geography, the primary realization by way of man of his profound lack of information, and the primary systematic search for know-how.

For a time the scientific manner which began so brilliantly in Greece and Alexandria became interrupted. The raids of the Teutonic barbarians, the westward power of the Mongolian peoples, convulsive non secular reconstruction and first rate pestilences put enormous traces upon political and social order. When civilization emerged once more from this phase of battle and confusion, slavery became not the premise of monetary lifestyles; and the first paper-mills have been getting ready a brand new medium for collective facts and co-operation in revealed remember. Gradually at this point and that, the look for knowledge, the systematic scientific method, became resumed.

And now from the sixteenth century onward, as an inevitable spinoff of systematic thought, appeared a step by step growing collection of inventions and gadgets affecting the intercommunication and interaction of fellows with one another. They all tended closer to wider range of action, more mutual blessings or injuries, and extended co-operation, and they got here faster and quicker. Men's minds had no longer been prepared for whatever of the type, and until the notable catastrophes at the start of the 20th century quickened guys's

minds, the historian has little or no to inform of any intelligently planned tries to fulfill the new situations this increasing drift of inventions changed into growing. The history of mankind for the closing 4 centuries is rather like that of an imprisoned sleeper, stirring clumsily and uneasily whilst the prison that restrains and shelters him catches hearth, now not waking however incorporating the crackling and heat of the hearth with historic and incongruous desires, than like that of a man consciously conscious to threat and possibility.

Since history is the tale not of individual lives however of communities, it's far inevitable that the inventions that discern most in the historical document are inventions affecting communications. In the sixteenth century the leader new things that we need to be aware are the arrival of printed paper and the sea-worthy, ocean-going crusing deliver the use of the brand new device of the mariner's compass. The former 321cheapened, spread, and revolutionized teaching, public statistics and dialogue, and the essential operations of political interest. The latter made the round international one. But almost similarly vital was the multiplied utilization and improvement of guns and gunpowder which the Mongols had first delivered westward within the thirteenth century. This destroyed the realistic immunity of barons of their castles and of walled cities. Guns swept away feudalism. Constantinople fell to weapons. Mexico and Peru fell earlier than the terror of the Spanish weapons.

CROMWELL DISSOLVES THE LONG PARLIAMENT
AND SO BECOMES AUTOCRAT

OF THE ENGLISH REPUBLIC

CROMWELL DISSOLVES THE LONG PARLIAMENT
AND SO BECOMES AUTOCRAT OF THE ENGLISH
REPUBLIC

(From a modern satirical print within the British Museum)

The seventeenth century saw the improvement of systematic medical e-book, a less conspicuous however in the long run far extra pregnant innovation. Conspicuous most of the leaders on this extremely good forward step changed into Sir Francis Bacon (1561-1626) afterwards Lord Verulam, Lord Chancellor of England. He became the student and perhaps the mouthpiece of some other Englishman; Dr. Gilbert, the experimental logician of Colchester (1540-1603). This 2nd 1st Baron Beaverbrook, just like the first, preached remark and experiment, and he used the inspiring and fruitful form of a Utopian tale, The New Atlantis, to express his dream of a outstanding provider of clinical studies.

Presently arose the Royal Society of London, the Florentine Society, and later other country wide bodies for the encouragement of research and the publication and exchange of knowledge. These European scientific societies became fountains now not only of countless innovations however additionally of a unfavorable criticism of the grotesque theological history of the sector that had dominated and crippled human idea for lots centuries.

Neither the 17th nor the eighteenth century witnessed any improvements so right away modern in human conditions as printed paper and the ocean-going deliver, however there was a consistent accumulation of expertise and clinical strength that become to endure its complete culmination within the 19th century. The exploration and mapping of the sector went on. Tasmania, Australia, New Zealand appeared on the map. In Great Britain inside the eighteenth century coal coke started to be used for metallurgical purposes, main to a enormous cheapening of iron and to the possibility of casting and the usage of it in larger pieces than have been feasible before, while it had been smelted with wood charcoal. Modern equipment dawned.

Like the bushes of the celestial metropolis, science bears bud and flower and fruit at the identical time and constantly. With the onset of the nineteenth century the actual fruition of technological know-how—which indeed henceforth may additionally never cease—started out. First came steam and metal, the railway, the first rate liner, substantial bridges and buildings, equipment of just about limitless strength, the opportunity of a bountiful pride of each material human need, after which, nevertheless greater brilliant, the hidden treasures of electrical technological know-how were opened to guys

We have as compared the political and social life of man from the sixteenth century onward to that of a snoozing prisoner who lies and goals even as his jail burns approximately him. In the 16th century the European thoughts become nevertheless taking place with its Latin Imperial dream, 323its dream of a Holy Roman Empire, united beneath a Catholic Church. But just as a few uncontrollable element in our composition will insist at times upon introducing into our goals the most absurd and destructive remarks, so thrust into this dream we find the napping face and craving stomach of the Emperor Charles V, even as Henry VIII of England and Luther tear the solidarity of Catholicism to shreds.

THE COURT AT VERSAILLES

THE COURT AT VERSAILLES

(From the print after Watteau within the British Museum)

In the 17th and eighteenth centuries the dream became to personal monarchy. The records of almost all Europe in the course of this period tells with variations the tale of an try and consolidate a monarchy, to make it absolute and to increase its power over weaker adjoining regions, and of the constant resistance, first of the landowners and then with the increase of overseas exchange and home enterprise, of the developing trading and moneyed magnificence, to the exaction and

interference of the crown. There is no ordinary victory of either side; here it is the King who receives the upper hand while there it's far the 324guy of private assets who beats the King. In one case we discover a King turning into the sun and centre of his country wide world, whilst just over his borders a strong mercantile elegance maintains a republic. So extensive various version suggests how entirely experimental, what neighborhood accidents, have been all of the various governments of this period.

A very not unusual parent in these national dramas is the King's minister, frequently in the nevertheless Catholic countries a prelate, who stands behind the King, serves him and dominates him with the aid of his imperative offerings.

Here within the limits set to us it's miles impossible to inform these diverse national dramas in detail. The buying and selling folk of Holland went Protestant and republican, and cast off the rule of thumb of Philip II of Spain, the son of the Emperor Charles V. In England Henry VIII and his minister Wolsey, Queen Elizabeth and her minister Burleigh, organized the rules of an absolutism that turned into wrecked via the folly of James I and Charles I. Charles I turned into beheaded for treason to his humans (1649), a new turn in the political idea of Europe. For a dozen years (until 1660) Britain turned into a republic; and the crown changed into an unstable energy, a great deal overshadowed by Parliament, till George III (1760-1820) made a strenuous and partly a hit attempt to repair its predominance. The King of France, however, became the maximum a success of all of the European Kings in perfecting monarchy. Two super ministers, Richelieu (1585-1642) and Mazarin (1602-1661), built up the electricity of the crown in that u . S . A ., and the system became aided by using the long reign and really considerable abilities of King Louis XIV, "the Grand Monarque" (1643-1715).

Louis XIV was certainly the sample King of Europe. He turned into, inside his boundaries, an incredibly capable King; his ambition turned into more potent than his baser passions, and he guided his u . S . Toward financial disaster via the complication of a lively foreign coverage with an intricate dignity that still extorts our admiration. His instantaneous desire was to consolidate and amplify France to the Rhine and Pyrenees, and to soak up the Spanish Netherlands; his remoter view saw the French Kings as the feasible successors of Charlemagne in a recast Holy Roman Empire. He made bribery a country method almost extra essential than war. Charles II of 325England changed into in his pay, and so have been maximum of the Polish nobility, currently to be defined. His money, or as a substitute the cash of the tax- paying training in France, went anywhere. But his winning profession was splendour. His first-rate palace at Versailles with its salons, its corridors, its mirrors, its terraces and fountains and parks and potentialities, became the envy and admiration of the arena.

THE SACK OF A VILLAGE DURING THE FRENCH REVOLUTION

THE SACK OF A VILLAGE DURING THE FRENCH REVOLUTION

(From Callot's "Miseres de la Guerre")

He provoked a universal imitation. Every king and princelet in Europe became building his own Versailles as a whole lot past his manner as his topics and credit would allow. Everywhere the the Aristocracy rebuilt or prolonged their chateaux to the new pattern. A amazing enterprise of beautiful and difficult fabrics and furnishings advanced. The high priced arts flourished everywhere; sculpture in alabaster, faience, gilt woodwork, steel work, stamped leather-based, lots track, staggering painting, stunning printing and bindings, high-quality crockery, best vintages. Amidst the mirrors and high-quality furniture went a atypical race of "gents" in tall

powdered wigs, silks and laces, poised upon excessive pink heels, supported by way of incredible canes; and nonetheless more tremendous “girls,” under towers of powdered hair and wearing enormous expansions of silk and satin sustained on cord. Through all of it postured the high-quality Louis, the solar of his global, unaware of the meagre and sulky and sour faces that watched him from those lower darkneses to which his sunshine did now not penetrate.

Map: Central Europe after the Peace of Westphalia, 1648

The German people remained politically divided for the duration of this era of the monarchies and experimental governments, and a tremendous wide variety of ducal and princely courts aped the splendours of Versailles on various scales. The Thirty Years’ War (1618-48), a devastating scramble among the Germans, Swedes and Bohemians for fluctuating political blessings, sapped the energies of Germany for a century. A map ought to display the crazy patchwork wherein this battle ended, a map of Europe in line with the peace of Westphalia (1648). One sees a tangle of principalities, dukedoms, unfastened states and the like, a few in part in and partially out of the Empire. Sweden’s arm, the reader will word, reached some distance into Germany; and besides for some islands of territory inside the imperial barriers France turned into nonetheless a ways from the Rhine. Amidst this patchwork the Kingdom of Prussia—it became a Kingdom in 1701—rose step by step to prominence and sustained a sequence of a success wars. Frederick the Great of Prussia (1740-86) had his Versailles at Potsdam, where his court spoke French, study French literature and rivalled the culture of the French King.

In 1714 the Elector of Hanover became King of England, adding one greater to the listing of monarchies half of in and 1/2 out of the empire.

The Austrian branch of the descendants of Charles V retained the identity of Emperor; the Spanish branch retained Spain. But now there was additionally an Emperor of the East once more. After the fall of Constantinople (1453), the grand duke of Moscow, Ivan the Great (1462-1505), claimed to be inheritor to the Byzantine throne and adopted the Byzantine double-headed eagle upon his arms. His grandson, Ivan IV, Ivan the Terrible (1533-1584), assumed the imperial name of Cæsar (Tsar). But only in the latter half of the 17th century did Russia end to appear far off and Asiatic to the European thoughts. The Tsar Peter the Great (1682-1725) introduced Russia into the arena of Western affairs. He built a brand new capital for his empire, Petersburg upon the Neva, that played the part of a window between Russia and Europe, and he set up his Versailles at Peterhof eighteen miles away, employing a French architect who gave him a terrace, fountains, cascades, photo gallery, park and all of the diagnosed appointments of Grand Monarchy. In Russia as in Prussia French became the language of the court docket.

Unhappily located among Austria, Prussia and Russia became the Polish kingdom, an ill-organized country of fantastic landed owners too jealous in their own man or woman grandeur to allow extra than a nominal kingship to the monarch they elected. Her fate changed into division among these 3 neighbours, despite the efforts of France to retain her as an impartial ally. Switzerland right now became a group of republican cantons; Venice became a republic; Italy like a lot of Germany changed into divided among minor dukes and princes. The Pope dominated like a prince inside the papal states, too nervous now of losing the allegiance of the remaining Catholic princes to intrude among them and their topics or to remind the arena of the commonweal of Christendom. There remained certainly no commonplace political concept in Europe at all; Europe become given over altogether to department and diversity.

All those sovereign princes and republics carried on schemes of aggrandizement in opposition to each other. Each one of them pursued a “overseas policy” of aggression against its neighbours and of aggressive alliances. We Europeans still stay to-day inside the ultimate section of this age of the multifarious sovereign states, and still be afflicted by the hatreds, hostilities and suspicions it engendered. The records of this time turns into increasingly glaringly “gossip,” increasingly unmeaning and wearisome to a current intelligence. You are advised of how this struggle turned into because of this King’s mistress, and the way the jealousy of 1 minister for some other precipitated that. A tittle-tattle of bribes and rivalries disgusts the shrewd student. The extra completely giant truth is that during spite of the obstruction of a score of frontiers, reading and thought nonetheless spread and extended and inventions accelerated. The eighteenth century noticed the arrival of a literature profoundly sceptical and crucial of the courts and policies of the time. In the sort of book as Voltaire’s *Candide* we have the expression of an countless weariness with the planless confusion of the European global.

329

LIII

THE NEW EMPIRES OF THE EUROPEANS IN ASIA AND OVERSEAS

WHILE Central Europe therefore remained divided and stressed, the Western Europeans and mainly the Dutch, the Scandinavians, the Spanish, the Portuguese, the French and the British have been extending the place in their struggles throughout the seas of all of the world. The printing press had dissolved the political ideas of Europe into a significant and at the beginning indeterminate fermentation, however that

different first rate innovation, the sea-going cruising deliver, was inexorably extending the variety of European enjoy to the furthestmost limits of salt water.

The first distant places settlements of the Dutch and Northern Atlantic Europeans have been no longer for colonization but for trade and mining. The Spaniards were first within the discipline; they claimed dominion over the complete of this new world of America. Very soon but the Portuguese asked for a percentage. The Pope—it became one of the final acts of Rome as mistress of the world—divided the new continent among those first-comers, giving Portugal Brazil and the entirety else east of a line 370 leagues west of the Cape Verde islands, and all the rest to Spain (1494). The Portuguese at the moment were additionally pushing remote places agency southward and eastward. In 1497 Vasco da Gama had sailed from Lisbon spherical the Cape to Zanzibar and then to Calicut in India. In 1515 there were Portuguese ships in Java and the Moluccas, and the Portuguese had been putting in place and fortifying trading stations round and about the coasts of the Indian Ocean. Mozambique, Goa, and two smaller possessions in India, Macao in China and part of Timor are to at the present time Portuguese possessions.

The countries excluded from America through the papal settlement paid little heed to the rights of Spain and Portugal. The English, the Danes and Swedes, and currently the Dutch, had been quickly staking 330out claims in North America and the West Indies, and his Most Catholic Majesty of France heeded the papal settlement as low as any Protestant. The wars of Europe prolonged themselves to these claims and possessions.

Map: Central Europe after the Peace of Westphalia, 1648

In the long term the English were the most a success on this scramble for foreign places possessions. The Danes and Swedes have been too 331 deeply entangled inside the complicated affairs of Germany to sustain powerful expeditions abroad. Sweden became wasted upon the German battlefields by a picturesque king, Gustavus Adolphus, the Protestant “Lion of the North.” The Dutch had been the heirs of such small settlements as Sweden made in America, and the Dutch were too close to French aggressions to preserve their personal against the British. In the a long way East the leader rivals for empire had been the British, Dutch and French, and in America the British, French and Spanish. The British had the splendid gain of a water frontier, the “silver streak” of the English Channel, in opposition to Europe. The lifestyle of the Latin Empire entangled them least.

EUROPEANS TIGER HUNTING IN INDIA

EUROPEANS TIGER HUNTING IN INDIA

(From the engraving of the image by using Zoffany within the British Museum)

France has usually idea an excessive amount of in terms of Europe. Throughout the eighteenth century she was losing her possibilities of growth in West and East alike with a view to dominate Spain, Italy and the German confusion. The religious and political dissensions of Britain inside the 17th century had driven many 332 of the English to seek a everlasting home in America. They struck root and accelerated and elevated, giving the British a outstanding benefit in the American struggle. In 1756 and 1760 the French lost Canada to the British and their American colonists, and some years later the British buying and selling company found itself absolutely dominant over French, Dutch and Portuguese within the peninsula of India. The first-rate Mongol Empire of Baber, Akbar and their successors had now a ways long past in decay, and the story of its realistic seize by means of a London buying and selling company, the British East India Company,

is one of the maximum amazing episodes inside the whole history of conquest.

THE LAST EFFORT AND FALL OF TIPPOO SULTAN

THE LAST EFFORT AND FALL OF TIPPOO SULTAN

(From the engraving of the photo by means of Singleton inside the British Museum)

This East India Company had been at the start at the time of its incorporation below Queen Elizabeth no greater than a enterprise of sea adventurers. Step by way of step they have been pressured to elevate troops and arm their ships. And now this buying and selling corporation, with its way of life of advantage, located itself dealing not merely in spices and dyes and tea and jewels, however in the revenues and territories of princes and the destinies of India. It had come to shop for and promote, and it observed itself attaining a terrific piracy. There turned into no one to mission its complaints. Is it any marvel that its captains and commanders and officials, nay, even its clerks and not unusual infantrymen, came back to England loaded with spoils?

Men beneath such situations, with a extremely good and rich land at their mercy, could not decide what they might or might not do. It turned into a odd land to them, with a peculiar daylight; its brown human beings appeared a special race, outside their variety of sympathy; its mysterious temples sustained terrific standards of behaviour. Englishmen at domestic have been perplexed while currently these generals and officials came returned to make darkish accusations against every different of extortions and cruelties. Upon Clive Parliament handed a vote of censure. He dedicated suicide in 1774. In 1788 Warren Hastings, a 2d remarkable Indian administrator, become impeached and acquitted (1792). It become a unusual and unprecedented scenario in the world's records. The English Parliament discovered itself ruling over a

London buying and selling company, which in its turn changed into dominating an empire a ways extra and extra populous than all the domain names of the British crown. To the bulk of the English humans India became a faraway, excellent, nearly inaccessible land, to which adventurous poor younger men went out, to go back after a few years very wealthy and very choleric old gentlemen. It became tough for the English to conceive what the life of those countless brown tens of millions within the eastern sunshine may be. Their imaginations declined the challenge. India remained romantically unreal. It changed into not possible for the English, consequently, to exert any effective supervision and manipulate over the organisation's complaints.

And at the same time as the Western European powers were as a result combating for these extremely good distant places empires upon each ocean within the global, two splendid land conquests had been in progress in Asia. China had thrown off the Mongol yoke in 1360, and flourished below the terrific native dynasty of the Mings till 1644. Then the Manchus, every other Mongol humans, reconquered China and remained masters of China till 1912. Meanwhile Russia became pushing East and developing to greatness in the global's affairs. The upward thrust of this first-rate critical strength of the old international, that is neither altogether of the East nor altogether of the West, is one of the utmost significance to our human destiny. Its enlargement is very in large part due to the arrival of a Christian steppe people, the Cossacks, who formed a barrier between the feudal agriculture of Poland and Hungary to the west and the Tartar to the east. The Cossacks have been the wild east of Europe, and in lots of approaches not unlike the wild west of the US within the middle 19th century. All who had made Russia too warm to hold them, criminals as well as the persecuted harmless, rebellious serfs, non secular secretaries, thieves, vagabonds, murderers, sought asylum inside the southern steppes and there made a clean start and fought for life and freedom towards Pole, Russian

and Tartar alike. Doubtless fugitives from the Tartars to the east also contributed to the Cossack combination. Slowly these border folk had been incorporated in the Russian imperial provider, a good deal as the highland clans of Scotland were transformed into regiments with the aid of the British government. New lands were offered them in Asia. They became a weapon towards the dwindling power of the Mongolian nomads, first in Turkestan after which across Siberia as a long way because the Amur.

The decay of Mongol power in the 17th and eighteenth centuries could be very hard to give an explanation for. Within or 3 centuries from the times of Jengis and Timurlane Central Asia had relapsed from a length of world ascendancy to excessive political impotence. Changes of weather, unrecorded pestilences, infections of a malarial type, may have played their element on this recession—which may be only a temporary recession measured by way of the dimensions of normal records—of the Central Asian peoples. Some authorities suppose that the unfold of Buddhist coaching from China also had a pacifying have an impact on upon them. At any fee, by way of the sixteenth century the Mongol, Tartar and Turkish peoples have been now not pressing outward, but had been being invaded, subjugated and driven back each with the aid of Christian Russia within the west and via China in the east.

All thru the seventeenth century the Cossacks have been spreading eastward from European Russia, and settling wherever they found agricultural situations. Cordons of forts and stations fashioned a moving frontier to those settlements to the south, wherein the Turkomans were still strong and lively; to the north-east, however, Russia had no frontier till she reached right to the Pacific

LIV

THE AMERICAN WAR OF INDEPENDENCE

THE 18th century for that reason saw the extremely good and volatile spectacle of a Europe divided in opposition to itself, and not with any unifying political or spiritual idea, yet via the tremendous stimulation of fellows' imaginations via the printed book, the printed map, and the opportunity of the new ocean-going transport, in a position in a disorganized and contentious manner to dominate all of the coasts of the sector. It changed into a planless, incoherent ebullition of organization because of temporary and almost accidental benefits over the relaxation of mankind. By distinctive feature of these benefits this new and nevertheless largely empty continent of America was peopled mainly from Western European sources, and South Africa and Australia and New Zealand marked down as potential houses for a European population.

The motive that had despatched Columbus to America and Vasco da Gama to India changed into the perennial first cause of all sailors because the start of factors—change. But while within the already populous and effective East the change cause remained dominant, and the European settlements remained trading settlements from which the European inhabitants was hoping to go back domestic to spend their money, the Europeans in America, handling communities at a very plenty lower level of efficient hobby, determined a new inducement for patience in the look for gold and silver. Particularly did the mines of Spanish America yield silver. The Europeans needed to go to America no longer genuinely as armed merchants however as prospectors, miners, searchers after natural products, and presently as planters. In the north they sought furs. Mines and plantations necessitated settlements. They obliged people to set up everlasting overseas

houses. Finally in a few cases, as when the English Puritans went to New England within the early 17th century to escape spiritual persecution, while within the eighteenth century Oglethorpe sent people from the English borrowers' prisons to Georgia, and while in the long run of the eighteenth the Dutch despatched orphans to the Cape of Good Hope, the Europeans frankly crossed the seas to locate new homes for exact. In the nineteenth century, and especially after the approaching of the steamship, the circulate of European emigration to the brand new empty lands of America and Australia rose for a few decades to the dimensions of a wonderful migration.

So there grew up everlasting foreign places populations of Europeans, and the European way of life turned into transplanted to a whole lot large areas than the ones in which it had been evolved. These new communities bringing a prepared-made civilization with them to these new lands grew up, as it had been, unplanned and unperceived; the statecraft of Europe did now not foresee them, and become unprepared with any ideas about their treatment. The politicians and ministers of Europe endured to regard them as basically expeditionary establishments, sources of sales, "possessions" and "dependencies," lengthy after their peoples had advanced a keen sense of their separate social lifestyles. And additionally they persevered to treat them as helplessly situation to the mother u . S . A . Lengthy after the populace had spread inland out of attain of any effective punitive operations from the ocean.

Because till right into the nineteenth century, it need to be remembered, the hyperlink of all these distant places empires became the oceangoing crusing deliver. On land the swiftest component become still the pony, and the concord and solidarity of political systems on land turned into nonetheless restrained by using the constraints of horse communications.

Now on the stop of the 1/3 sector of the eighteenth century the northern -thirds of North America turned into under the British crown. France had abandoned America. Except for Brazil, which was Portuguese, and one or two small islands and regions in French, British, Danish and Dutch fingers, Florida, Louisiana, California and all America to the south became Spanish. It changed into the British colonies south of Maine and Lake Ontario that first demonstrated the inadequacy of the sailing deliver to preserve overseas populations together in one political system.

These British colonies were very miscellaneous of their origin and person. There have been French, Swedish and Dutch settlements 337 in addition to British; there had been British Catholics in Maryland and British ultra-Protestants in New England, and while the New Englanders farmed their very own land and denounced slavery, the British in Virginia and the south had been planters using a swelling multitude of imported negro slaves. There was no natural commonplace cohesion in such states. To get from one to the other may mean a coasting voyage infrequently less tedious than the transatlantic crossing. But the union that numerous starting place and herbal situations denied the British Americans was pressured upon them by the selfishness and stupidity of the British authorities in London. They have been taxed without any voice in the spending of the taxes; their change was sacrificed to British pursuits; the surprisingly profitable slave alternate become maintained with the aid of the British authorities regardless of the opposition of the Virginians who—even though quite willing to preserve and use slaves—feared to be swamped by way of an ever-growing barbaric black populace.

GEORGE WASHINGTON

GEORGE WASHINGTON

(From a portray via Gilbert Stuart)

Britain at that time was lapsing toward an intenser shape of monarchy, and the obstinate character of George III (1760-1820) did a good deal to force on a war between the house and the colonial governments.

The struggle changed into brought about by rules which favoured the London East India Company at the fee of the American shipper. Three cargoes of tea which were imported beneath the brand new conditions were thrown overboard in Boston harbour by a band of men disguised as Indians (1773). Fighting handiest started in 1775 while the British government attempted to arrest two of the American leaders at Lexington close to Boston. The first pictures were fired in Lexington by way of the British; the primary fighting occurred at Concord.

THE BATTLE OF BUNKER HILL, NEAR BOSTON

THE BATTLE OF BUNKER HILL, NEAR BOSTON

(From the engraving of the image with the aid of John Trumbull within the British Museum)

So the American War of Independence started out, though for extra than a yr the colonists showed themselves extraordinarily unwilling to sever their links with the mom land. It become now not till the center of 1776 that the Congress of the rebel states issued "The Declaration of Independence." George Washington, who like among the leading colonists of the time had had a navy schooling inside the wars in opposition to the French, become made commander-in-chief. In 1777 a British standard, General Burgoyne, in an try to reach New York from Canada, turned into defeated at Freemans Farm and obliged to surrender at Saratoga. In the same yr the French and Spanish declared war upon Great Britain, greatly hampering her sea communications. A 2d British army beneath General Cornwallis became caught inside the Yorktown peninsula in Virginia and obliged to capitulate in 1781. In 1783 peace

339 became made in Paris, and the Thirteen Colonies from Maine to Georgia became a union of independent sovereign States. So the USA of America came into life. Canada remained loyal to the British flag.

Map: The United States, displaying extent of settlement in 1790

For 4 years those States had only a very feeble central authorities under the Articles of Confederation, and that they appeared destined to interrupt up into separate unbiased groups. Their instant separation became behind schedule through the hostility of the British and a sure aggressiveness at the part of the French which delivered home to them the instantaneous risks of disunion. A Constitution was drawn up and ratified in 1788 setting up a greater Federal government with a President retaining very significant powers, and the vulnerable experience of country-wide cohesion became invigorated with the aid of a 2nd war with Britain in 1812. Nevertheless the area covered by means of the States turned into so wide and their interests so numerous at that point, that—given the handiest manner of verbal exchange then available—a disintegration of the Union into separate states at the European scale of size was merely a question of time. Attendance at Washington meant an extended, tedious and insecure adventure for the senators and congressmen of the remoter districts, and the mechanical impediments to the diffusion of a commonplace education and a not unusual literature and intelligence had been almost insurmountable. Forces have been at work within the international but that have been to arrest the process of differentiation altogether. Presently came the river steamboat after which the railway and the telegraph to stop the US from fragmentation, and weave its dispersed human beings together again into the primary of first-rate current nations.

Twenty-two years later the Spanish colonies in America had been to observe the example of the Thirteen and spoil their reference to Europe. But being more dispersed over the continent and separated by way of incredible mountainous chains and deserts and forests and with the aid of the Portuguese Empire of Brazil, they did now not achieve a union amongst themselves. They have become a constellation of republican states, very prone at the start to wars amongst themselves and to revolutions.

Brazil followed a alternatively exclusive line toward the inevitable separation. In 1807 the French armies under Napoleon had occupied the mom us of a of Portugal, and the monarchy had fled to Brazil. From that time on till they separated, Portugal became instead a dependency of Brazil than Brazil of Portugal. In 1822 Brazil declared itself a separate Empire below Pedro I, a son of the Portuguese King. But the new global has by no means been very favourable to monarchy. In 1889 the Emperor of Brazil was shipped off quietly to Europe, and the USA of Brazil fell into line with the relaxation of republican America.

341

LV

THE FRENCH REVOLUTION AND THE RESTORATION OF MONARCHY IN FRANCE

BRITAIN had hardly ever lost the Thirteen Colonies in America before a profound social and political convulsion at the very heart of Grand Monarchy became to remind Europe still extra vividly of the essentially temporary nature of the political arrangements of the sector.

We have said that the French monarchy changed into the maximum a success of the non-public monarchies in Europe. It became the envy and version of a mess of competing and minor courts. But it flourished on a foundation of injustice that led to its dramatic fall apart. It become outstanding and aggressive, but it turned into wasteful of the lifestyles and substance of its common human beings. The clergy and nobility had been included from taxation by way of a machine of exemption that threw the entire burden of the country upon the middle and decrease training. The peasants were ground down by way of taxation; the middle lessons were ruled and humiliated by means of the nobility.

In 1787 this French monarchy determined itself bankrupt and obliged to name representatives of the one-of-a-kind classes of the area into session upon the perplexities of faulty profits and immoderate expenditure. In 1789 the States General, a gathering of the nobles, clergy and commons, roughly equal to the earlier form of the British Parliament, turned into referred to as collectively at Versailles. It had no longer assembled due to the fact that 1610. For all that point France had been an absolute monarchy. Now the human beings located a means of expressing their long fermenting discontent. Disputes straight away broke out between the three estates, because of the remedy of the Third Estate, the Commons, to manipulate the Assembly. The Commons were given the better of those disputes and the States General became a National Assembly, in reality resolved to hold the crown so as, as the British Parliament saved the British 342crown in order. The king (Louis XVI) organized for a war and brought up troops from the provinces. Whereupon Paris and France revolted.

The disintegrate of the absolute monarchy became very quick. The grim-looking prison of the Bastille was stormed by using the human beings of Paris, and the rebellion spread swiftly at some point of France. In the east and north-west provinces many chateaux belonging to the the Aristocracy have been

burnt via the peasants, their title-deeds cautiously destroyed, and the owners murdered or pushed away. In a month the ancient and decayed gadget of the aristocratic order had collapsed. Many of the main princes and courtiers of the queen's birthday party fled abroad. A provisional town government changed into installation in Paris and in maximum of the opposite huge cities, and a brand new armed force, the National Guard, a pressure designed mainly and it seems that to resist the forces of the crown, changed into introduced into lifestyles by using these municipal bodies. The National Assembly discovered itself called upon to create a new political and social device for a new age.

It became a undertaking that attempted the powers of that amassing to the maximum. It made a super sweep of the chief injustices of the absolutist regime; it abolished tax exemptions, serfdom, aristocratic titles and privileges and sought to set up a constitutional monarchy in Paris. The king deserted Versailles and its splendours and saved a diminished country inside the palace of the Tuileries in Paris.

For two years it seemed that the National Assembly might battle through to an effective modernized authorities. Much of its paintings became sound and nevertheless endures, if plenty became experimental and had to be undone. Much changed into useless. There became a clearing up of the penal code; torture, arbitrary imprisonment and persecutions for heresy were abolished. The historical provinces of France, Normandy, Burgundy and so forth gave region to 80 departments. Promotion to the very best ranks in the army was laid open to guys of each class. An incredible and easy gadget of regulation courts become installation, but its value became much vitiated by means of having the judges appointed by means of popular election for brief intervals of time. This made the crowd a kind of very last court docket of enchantment, and the judges, like the individuals of the Assembly, were forced to play to the gallery. And the entire tremendous property of the church

changed into seized and administered 343 by the kingdom; spiritual establishments no longer engaged in schooling or works of charity had been broken up, and the salaries of the clergy made a rate upon the country. This in itself changed into now not a awful aspect for the lower clergy in France, who had been regularly scandalously underpaid in assessment with the richer dignitaries. But similarly the choice of monks and bishops become made optionally available, which struck at the very root concept of the Roman Church, which targeted everything upon the Pope, and in which all authority is from above downward. Practically the National Assembly desired at one blow to make the church in France Protestant, in employer if no longer in doctrine. Everywhere there were disputes and conflicts among the country priests created by way of the National Assembly and the recalcitrant (non-juring) priests who had been loyal to Rome.

In 1791 the test of Constitutional monarchy in France turned into brought to an abrupt cease by means of the action of the king and queen, running in concert with their aristocratic and monarchist pals overseas. Foreign armies amassed at the Eastern frontier and one night in June the king and queen and their youngsters slipped far from the Tuileries and fled to join the foreigners and the aristocratic exiles. They were caught at Varennes and taken returned to Paris, and an France flamed up right into a ardour of patriotic republicanism. A Republic was proclaimed, open warfare with Austria and Prussia ensued, and the king was attempted and carried out (January, 1793) at the version already set by way of England, for treason to his human beings.

And now accompanied a strange phase within the records of the French people. There arose a high-quality flame of enthusiasm for France and the Republic. There turned into to be an give up to compromise at home and abroad; at domestic royalists and each form of disloyalty had been to be stamped out; abroad France turned into to be the protector and helper of

all revolutionaries. All Europe, all the international, become to come to be Republican. The young people of France poured into the Republican armies; a brand new and top notch tune spread via the land, a song that still warms the blood like wine, the Marseillaise. Before that chant and the jumping columns of French bayonets and their enthusiastically served weapons the foreign armies rolled again; earlier than the cease of 1792 the French armies had long past a ways past the utmost achievements of Louis XIV; everywhere they stood on 344foreign soil. They were in Brussels, they had overrun Savoy, they had raided to Mayence; they had seized the Scheldt from Holland. Then the French Government did an unwise element. It had been exasperated by using the expulsion of its representative from England upon the execution of Louis, and it declared battle against England. It become an unwise thing to do, because the revolution which had given France a brand new enthusiastic infantry and a extraordinary artillery released from its aristocratic officials and many cramping situations had destroyed the subject of the military, and the English have been excellent upon the sea. And this provocation united all England in opposition to France, whereas there were at the start a completely big liberal motion in Great Britain in sympathy with the revolution.

THE TRIAL OF LOUIS XVI

THE TRIAL OF LOUIS XVI

(From a print inside the British Museum)

Of the fight that France made in the next few years against a European coalition we can't tell in any detail. She drove the Austrians for ever out of Belgium, and made Holland a republic. The Dutch fleet, frozen within the Texel, surrendered to a handful of 345cavalry without firing its weapons. For a while the French thrust toward Italy changed into hung up, and it become simplest in 1796 that a brand new trendy, Napoleon Bonaparte, led the ragged and hungry republican armies in triumph throughout Piedmont to Mantua and Verona. Says C.

F. Atkinson, [1] “What astonished the Allies maximum of all was the number and the speed of the Republicans. These improvised armies had in fact not anything to delay them. Tents were unprocurable for want of money, untransportable for want of the giant range of wagons that could were required, and additionally useless, for the pain that could have precipitated wholesale desertion in professional armies was cheerfully borne with the aid of the men of 1793- ninety four. Supplies for armies of then unheard-of length could not be carried in convoys, and the French quickly have become familiar with ‘residing at the united states.’ Thus 1793 saw the start of the cutting-edge machine of conflict—rapidity of movement, full development of national energy, bivouacs, requisitions and force as against cautious manœuvring, small expert armies, tents and full rations, and chicane. The first represented the decision-compelling spirit, the second one the spirit of risking little to gain a bit”

And even as these ragged hosts of fans were chanting the Marseillaise and fighting for la France, obviously never pretty clear of their minds whether or not they were looting or releasing the international locations into which they poured, the republican enthusiasm in Paris was spending itself in a far less glorious fashion. The revolution changed into now below the sway of a fanatical leader, Robespierre. This guy is difficult to judge; he changed into a person of bad physique, clearly timid, and a prig. But he had that maximum necessary present for energy, faith. He set himself to shop the Republic as he conceived it, and he imagined it may be stored by no other guy than he. So that to hold in energy became to keep the Republic. The living spirit of the Republic, it appeared, had sprung from a slaughter of royalists and the execution of the king. There have been insurrections; one inside the west, within the district of La Vendée, where the human beings rose against the conscription and in opposition to the dispossession of the orthodox clergy, and had been led by noblemen and clergymen; one inside the south, wherein Lyons and Marseilles

had risen and the royalists of Toulon³⁴⁶ had admitted an English and Spanish garrison. To which there appeared no extra useful respond than to go on killing royalists.

The Revolutionary Tribunal went to work, and a constant slaughtering commenced. The invention of the guillotine became opportune to this mood. The queen become guillotined, most of Robespierre's antagonists have been guillotined, atheists who argued that there was no Supreme Being had been guillotined; daily, week by means of week, this infernal new gadget chopped off heads and greater heads and more. The reign of Robespierre lived, it seemed, on blood; and wanted more and more, as an opium-taker desires an increasing number of opium.

THE EXECUTION OF MARIE ANTOINETTE, QUEEN OF FRANCE,

OCTOBER 16, 1793

THE EXECUTION OF MARIE ANTOINETTE, QUEEN OF FRANCE, OCTOBER sixteen, 1793

(From a print in the British Museum)

Finally in the summer season of 1794 Robespierre himself became overthrown and guillotined. He was succeeded through a Directory of five guys which carried at the conflict of defence abroad and held France collectively at home for 5 years. Their reign shaped a curious interlude on this records of violent changes. They took things ³⁴⁷as they discovered them. The propagandist zeal of the revolution carried the French armies into Holland, Belgium, Switzerland, south Germany and north Italy. Everywhere kings were expelled and republics installation. But such propagandist zeal as animated the Directorate did now not save you the looting of the treasures of the liberated peoples to alleviate the economic embarrassment of the French Government. Their wars have become less and much less the holy wars of freedom, and

increasingly more like the aggressive wars of the historic regime. The ultimate function of Grand Monarchy that France became disposed to discard was her culture of overseas policy. One discovers it still as vigorous underneath the Directorate as though there were no revolution.

Unhappily for France and the sector a person arose who embodied in its intensest form this national egotism of the French. He gave that u . S . A . Ten years of glory and the humiliation of a very last defeat. This was that identical Napoleon Bonaparte who had led the armies of the Directory to victory in Italy.

Throughout the five years of the Directorate he were scheming and operating for self-development. Gradually he clambered to preferred strength. He become a man of severely limited information but of ruthless directness and exquisite energy. He had all started existence as an extremist of the college of Robespierre; he owed his first promotion to that side; but he had no actual draw close of the new forces that were operating in Europe. His utmost political imagination carried him to a belated and tawdry attempt to restore the Western Empire. He attempted to ruin the stays of the old Holy Roman Empire, intending to replace it with the aid of a brand new one centring upon Paris. The Emperor in Vienna ceased to be the Holy Roman Emperor and have become simply Emperor of Austria. Napoleon divorced his French wife a good way to marry an Austrian princess.

He became nearly monarch of France as First Consul in 1799, and he made himself Emperor of France in 1804 in direct imitation of Charlemagne. He turned into topped through the Pope in Paris, taking the crown from the Pope and putting it upon his very own head himself as Charlemagne had directed. His son was topped King of Rome.

For some years Napoleon's reign was a profession of victory. He conquered most of Italy and Spain, defeated Prussia and Austria, and dominated all Europe west of Russia. But he by no means received the command of the ocean from the British and his fleets sustained a conclusive defeat inflicted by using the British Admiral Nelson at Trafalgar (1805). Spain rose in opposition to him in 1808 and a British navy under Wellington thrust the French armies slowly northward out of the peninsula. In 1811 Napoleon came into conflict with the Tsar Alexander I, and in 1812 he invaded Russia with a remarkable conglomerate military of six hundred,000 men, that became defeated and largely destroyed via the Russians and the Russian iciness. Germany rose against him, Sweden became against him. The French armies were beaten returned and at Fontainebleau Napoleon abdicated (1814). He turned into exiled to Elba, returned to France for one ultimate effort in 1815 and turned into defeated by way of the allied British, Belgians and Prussians at Waterloo. He died a British prisoner at St. Helena in 1821.

The forces launched by the French revolution were wasted and completed. A exquisite Congress of the triumphant allies met at Vienna to repair as a long way as possible the situation that the terrific hurricane had rent to portions. For almost forty years a type of peace, a peace of exhausted attempt, was maintained in Europe.

[1] In his article, "French Revolutionary Wars," inside the Encyclopædia Britannica.

THE UNEASY PEACE IN EUROPE THAT FOLLOWED THE FALL OF NAPOLEON

TWO primary reasons avoided that duration from being a entire social and international peace, and organized the manner for the cycle of wars between 1854 and 1871. The first of these changed into the tendency of the royal courts involved, closer to the healing of unfair privilege and interference with freedom of concept and writing and teaching. The second become the impossible machine of limitations drawn through the diplomatists of Vienna.

The inherent disposition of monarchy to march again toward past situations become first and most in particular happen in Spain. Here even the Inquisition turned into restored. Across the Atlantic the Spanish colonies had followed the example of america and revolted towards the European Great Power System, while Napoleon set his brother Joseph on the Spanish throne in 1810. The George Washington of South America become General Bolivar. Spain turned into unable to suppress this rebellion, it dragged on a lot because the United States War of Independence had dragged on, and at remaining the notion changed into made by Austria, according with the spirit of the Holy Alliance, that the European monarch must assist Spain in this conflict. This turned into hostile by Britain in Europe, however it was the activate movement of President Monroe of the United States in 1823 which conclusively warned off this projected monarchist healing. He announced that america would regard any extension of the European gadget within the Western Hemisphere as a adverse act. Thus arose the Monroe Doctrine, the doctrine that there need to be no extension of greater- American authorities in America, which has stored the Great Power system out of America for almost one hundred years and accepted the new states of

Spanish America to workout their destinies along their personal strains.

350But if Spanish monarchism misplaced its colonies, it can as a minimum, underneath the protection of the Concert of Europe, do what it chose in Europe. A famous revolt in Spain changed into crushed by a French army in 1823, with a mandate from a European congress, and simultaneously Austria suppressed a revolution in Naples.

In 1824 Louis XVIII died, and became succeeded by using Charles X. Charles set himself to break the freedom of the click and universities, and to restore absolute authorities; the sum of 1000000000 francs become voted to compensate the nobles for the chateau burnings and sequestrations of 1789. In 1830 Paris rose towards this embodiment of the historic regime, and replaced him by way of Louis Philippe, the son of that Philip, Duke of Orleans, who become carried out for the duration of the Terror. The other continental monarchies, in face of the open approval of the revolution by way of Great Britain and a strong liberal ferment in Germany and Austria, did not interfere on this affair. After all, France became nevertheless a monarchy. This guy Louis Philippe (1830-forty eight) remained the constitutional King of France for eighteen years.

Such had been the uneasy swayings of the peace of the Congress of Vienna, which have been provoked via the reactionary lawsuits of the monarchists. The stresses that arose from the unscientific obstacles deliberate by means of the diplomatists at Vienna accumulated pressure greater intentionally, but they were even more risky to the peace of mankind. It is notably inconvenient to administer collectively the affairs of peoples speaking extraordinary languages and so reading distinctive literatures and having extraordinary widespread thoughts, in particular if the ones differences are

exacerbated through religious disputes. Only a few sturdy mutual hobby, inclusive of the not unusual shielding desires of the Swiss mountaineers, can justify a near linking of peoples of diverse languages and faiths; or even in Switzerland there's the maximum nearby autonomy. When, as in Macedonia, populations are jumbled together a patchwork of villages and districts, the cantonal system is imperatively wanted. But if the reader will observe the map of Europe as the Congress of Vienna drew it, he will see that this amassing appears nearly as if it had planned the maximum of neighborhood exasperation.

It destroyed the Dutch Republic, quite needlessly, it lumped 351 collectively the Protestant Dutch with the French-speaking Catholics of the old Spanish (Austrian) Netherlands, and installation a nation of the Netherlands. It passed over now not simply the antique republic of Venice, however all of North Italy as a ways as Milan to the German-speakme Austrians. French-talking Savoy it combined with portions of Italy to restore the kingdom of Sardinia. Austria and Hungary, already a sufficiently explosive combination of discordant nationalities, Germans, Hungarians, Czecho-Slovaks, Jugo-Slavs, Roumanians, and now Italians, became made still greater not possible by means of confirming Austria's Polish acquisitions of 1772 and 1795. The Catholic and republican-spirited Polish people were chiefly given over to the much less civilized rule of the Greek-orthodox Tsar, however critical districts went to Protestant Prussia. The Tsar changed into additionally confirmed in his acquisition of the entirely alien Finns. The very distinctive Norwegian and Swedish peoples had been bound collectively under one king. Germany, the reader will see, became left in a specifically risky nation of clutter. Prussia and Austria have been each in part in and partly out of a German confederation, which blanketed a mess of teen states. The King of Denmark came into the German confederation through virtue of sure German-speaking possessions in Holstein. Luxembourg became protected inside the German confederation, even though its ruler become also

King of the Netherlands, and even though many of its peoples talked French.

Here become a whole dismiss of the fact that the those who talk German and base their thoughts on German literature, the people who speak Italian and base their thoughts on Italian literature, and the folks that speak Polish and base their thoughts on Polish literature, will all be a long way higher off and most helpful and least obnoxious to the relaxation of mankind if they behavior their personal affairs of their very own idiom within the ring-fence in their personal speech. Is it any surprise that one of the maximum popular songs in Germany at some point of this period declared that anywhere the German tongue turned into spoken, there has been the German Fatherland!

352

PORTRAIT OF NAPOLEON (CORONATION)

PORTRAIT OF NAPOLEON (CORONATION)

(From a print inside the British Museum)

In 1830 French-speaking Belgium, stirred up by the cutting-edge revolution in France, revolted towards its Dutch affiliation in the nation of the Netherlands. The powers, terrified on the possibilities of a republic or of annexation to France, moved quickly in to pacify this case, and gave the Belgians a monarch, Leopold I of Saxe-Coburg Gotha. There have been also ineffectual revolts in Italy and Germany in 1830, and a much more severe one in Russian Poland. A republican government held out in Warsaw for a year towards Nicholas I (who succeeded Alexander in 1825), and changed into then stamped out of existence with great violence and cruelty. The Polish language was banned, and the Greek Orthodox church become substituted for the Roman Catholic as the state faith

Map: Europe after the Congress of Vienna

In 1821 there was an insurrection of the Greeks in opposition to the Turks. For six years they fought a desperate struggle, even as the governments of Europe regarded on. Liberal opinion protested against this inaction; volunteers from each European u . S . A . Joined the insurgents, and at final Britain, France and Russia took joint movement. The Turkish fleet become destroyed by means of the French and English on the conflict of Navarino (1827), and the Tsar invaded Turkey. By the treaty of Adrianople (1829) Greece become declared free, but she was no longer approved to resume her ancient republican traditions. A German king was discovered for Greece, one Prince Otto of Bavaria, and Christian governors have been installation inside the Danubian provinces (which are now Roumania) and Serbia (a part of the Jugo-Slav area). Much blood had nonetheless to run however before the Turk become altogether expelled from those lands.

355

LVII

THE DEVELOPMENT OF MATERIAL KNOWLEDGE

THROUGHOUT the 17th and eighteenth centuries and the outlet years of the 19th century, while those conflicts of the powers and princes were happening in Europe, and the patchwork of the treaty of Westphalia (1648) changed into converting kaleidoscopically into the patchwork of the treaty of Vienna (1815), and whilst the crusing deliver became spreading European impact for the duration of the arena, a constant growth of understanding and a popular clearing up of men's ideas approximately the sector in which they lived became in progress in the European and Europeanized global.

It went on disconnected from political existence, and producing in the course of the 17th and eighteenth centuries no striking instantaneous results in political lifestyles. Nor turned into it affecting popular concept very profoundly at some point of this period. These reactions were to come later, and best of their complete force in the latter half of the nineteenth century. It became a method that went on mainly in a small international of wealthy and independent-spirited humans. Without what the English name the “personal gentleman,” the clinical procedure couldn’t have started in Greece, and could not had been renewed in Europe. The universities performed a part but now not a main part in the philosophical and medical idea of this era. Endowed learning is apt to be timid and conservative studying, lacking in initiative and resistant to innovation, unless it has the spur of contact with unbiased minds.

We have already referred to the formation of the Royal Society in 1662 and its paintings in knowing the dream of 1st baron beaverbrook’s New Atlantis. Throughout the eighteenth century there has been lots clearing up of wellknown ideas about depend and motion, tons mathematical strengthen, a systematic development of the use of optical glass in microscope and telescope, a renewed electricity in classificatory natural 356history, a outstanding revival of anatomical technological know-how. The science of geology—foreshadowed by way of Aristotle and anticipated by using Leonardo da Vinci (1452-1519)—started out its splendid challenge of deciphering the Record of the Rocks.

EARLY ROLLING STOCK ON THE LIVERPOOL AND
MANCHESTER RAILWAY IN

THE FIRST DAYS OF THE RAILWAY

EARLY ROLLING STOCK ON THE LIVERPOOL AND
MANCHESTER RAILWAY IN THE FIRST DAYS OF THE
RAILWAY

The progress of physical technology reacted upon metallurgy. Improved metallurgy, affording the possibility of a larger and bolder dealing with of hundreds of steel and other substances, reacted upon practical innovations. Machinery on a new scale and in a brand new abundance appeared to revolutionize enterprise.

In 1804 Trevithick tailored the Watt engine to transport and made the first locomotive. In 1825 the first railway, between Stockton and Darlington, became opened, and Stephenson's "Rocket," with a 13-ton train, got up to a speed of 40-4 miles according to hour. From 1830 onward railways accelerated. By the middle of the century a network of railways had unfold all over Europe.

EARLY TRAVELLING ON THE LIVERPOOL AND MANCHESTER RAILWAY, 1833

EARLY TRAVELLING ON THE LIVERPOOL AND MANCHESTER RAILWAY, 1833

Here changed into a unexpected exchange in what had long been a set situation of human lifestyles, the maximum charge of land delivery. After the Russian catastrophe, Napoleon travelled from near Vilna to Paris in 312 hours. This became a journey of about 1, four hundred miles. He turned into journeying with each plausible benefit, and he averaged 357 underneath 5 miles an hour. An normal vacationer could not have achieved this distance in two times the time. These have been approximately the equal maximum fees of tour as held top among Rome and Gaul inside the first century A.D. Then suddenly got here this remarkable alternate. The railways decreased this journey for any normal vacationer to less than 40-eight hours. That is to mention, they reduced the chief European distances to about a 10th of what they were. They made it possible to perform administrative work in areas ten times as great as any that had hitherto been achievable below one management. The complete importance of that possibility

in Europe still remains to be found out. Europe remains netted in barriers drawn within the horse and street generation. In America the results were immediate. To the US of America, sprawling westward, it meant the opportunity of a continuous get entry to to Washington, however some distance the frontier travelled throughout the continent. It meant team spirit, sustained on a scale that might in any other case have been impossible.

THE STEAMBOAT: *CLERMONT*, 1807, U.S.A.

THE STEAMBOAT: CLERMONT, 1807, U.S.A.

The steamboat changed into, if some thing, a touch in advance of the steam engine in its earlier stages. There turned into a steamboat, the Charlotte Dundas, at the Firth of Clyde Canal in 1802, and in 1807 an American named Fulton had a steamer, the Clermont, with British-built engines, upon the Hudson River above New York. The first steamship to put to sea was additionally an American, the Phoenix, which went from New York (Hoboken) to Philadelphia. So, too, became the first ship using steam (she additionally had sails) to move the Atlantic, the Savannah (1819). All these have been paddle-wheel boats and paddle-wheel boats aren't adapted to paintings in heavy seas. The paddles wreck too easily, and the boat is then disabled. The screw steamship observed as an alternative slowly. Many problems had to be surmounted before the screw was a plausible thing. Not until the middle of the century did the tonnage of steamships upon the ocean begin to overhaul that of crusing ships. After that the evolution in sea delivery changed into rapid. For the primary time guys started to cross the seas and oceans with some actuality as to the date of their arrival. The transatlantic crossing, which were an uncertain journey of several weeks—which may stretch to months—became accelerated, till in 1910 it became delivered down, in the case of the quickest boats, to beneath five days, with a almost notifiable hour of arrival.

Concurrently with the development of steam transport upon land and sea a new and putting addition to the centers of human intercourse arose out of the investigations of Volta, Galvani and Faraday into numerous electric phenomena. The electric powered telegraph came into existence in 1835. The first underseas cable changed into laid in 1851 among France and England. In a few years the telegraph gadget had unfold over the civilized world, and news which had hitherto travelled slowly from point to point became practically simultaneous all through the earth.

These matters, the steam railway and the electrical telegraph, have been to the famous creativeness of the center 19th century the most putting and progressive of innovations, but they have been most effective the most conspicuous and clumsy first culmination of a miles extra massive procedure. Technical understanding and skill were growing with an exceptional rapidity, and to an high-quality quantity measured by way of the progress of any previous age. Far much less conspicuous at the start in everyday lifestyles, however in the end some distance more important, was the extension of guy's power over various structural substances. Before the middle of the eighteenth century iron become decreased from its ores by using 359approach of wood charcoal, became treated in small portions, and hammered and wrought into form. It was fabric for a craftsman. Quality and remedy were surprisingly dependent upon the experience and sagacity of the man or woman iron-employee. The biggest loads of iron that would be treated under those conditions amounted at most (in the sixteenth century) to 2 or three heaps. (There became a completely particular upward limit, consequently, to the scale of cannon.) The blast-furnace rose inside the eighteenth century and evolved with using coke. Not before the eighteenth century do we find rolled sheet iron (1728) and rolled rods and bars (1783). Nasmyth's steam hammer got here as late as 1838.

The ancient international, because of its metallurgical inferiority, couldn't use steam. The steam engine, even the primitive pumping engine, couldn't broaden earlier than sheet iron became available. The early engines seem to the modern eye very pitiful and clumsy bits of ironmongery, but they had been the maximum that the metallurgical science of the time should do. As late as 1856 came the Bessemer process, and currently (1864) the open-hearth technique, in which metallic and each form of iron might be melted, purified and solid in a way and upon a scale hitherto unheard of. To-day within the electric powered furnace one can also see tons of incandescent steel swirling approximately like boiling milk in a saucepan. Nothing inside the previous sensible advances of mankind is comparable in its consequences to the whole mastery over great masses of metallic and iron and over their texture and pleasant which man has now executed. The railways and early engines of all types were the mere first triumphs of the brand new metallurgical strategies. Presently got here ships of iron and steel, giant bridges, and a new manner of constructing with metal upon a colossal scale. Men found out too past due that they'd deliberate their railways with a long way too timid a gauge, that they may have organized their visiting with a ways extra balance and comfort upon a miles bigger scale.

Before the nineteenth century there were no ships within the international tons over 2,000 heaps burthen; now there may be not anything high-quality about a 50,000-ton liner. There are those who sneer at this type of progress as being a progress in "mere length," but that type of sneering simply marks the intellectual limitations of individuals who indulge in it. 360The excellent ship or the metal-body building isn't always, as they imagine, a magnified version of the small ship or constructing of the past; it's far a factor distinct in kind, extra gently and strongly built, of finer and more potent materials; in preference to being a component of precedent and rule-of-thumb, it's miles a issue of diffused and elaborate calculation. In the old residence or ship, be counted turned into dominant

—the fabric and its desires had to be slavishly obeyed; inside the new, count number have been captured, changed, coerced. Think of the coal and iron and sand dragged out of the banks and pits, wrenched, wrought, molten and forged, to be flung at ultimate, a narrow glittering top of metallic and glass, 600 ft above the crowded city!

We have given these details of the development in guy's information of the metallurgy of metal and its effects by way of way of example. A parallel tale can be instructed of the metallurgy of copper and tin, and of a mess of metals, nickel and aluminium to call however two, unknown before the nineteenth century dawned. It is in this first-rate and developing mastery over materials, over exceptional varieties of glass, over rocks and plasters etc, over colors and textures, that the principle triumphs of the mechanical revolution have up to now been completed. Yet we're nonetheless inside the degree of the primary culmination in the remember. We have the power, but we've got nonetheless to discover ways to use our electricity. Many of the first employments of those presents of technological know-how were vulgar, tawdry, silly or terrible. The artist and the adaptor have still rarely started to work with the infinite kind of materials now at their disposal.

Parallel with this extension of mechanical opportunities the new technological know-how of electricity grew up. It changed into best inside the eighties of the 19th century that this frame of enquiry commenced to yield effects to affect the vulgar thoughts. Then suddenly came electric powered light and electric traction, and the transmutation of forces, the possibility of sending electricity, that might be modified into mechanical motion or light or heat as one selected, alongside a copper cord, as water is sent along a pipe, commenced to come thru to the thoughts of everyday human beings....

The British and French had been at the beginning the leading peoples in this brilliant proliferation of expertise; but presently the Germans, who had learnt humility under Napoleon, showed such zeal and pertinacity in scientific enquiry as to overtake those leaders. British 361 technology was in large part the advent of Englishmen and Scotchmen working out of doors the ordinary centres of erudition.

EIGHTEENTH CENTURY SPINNING WHEEL

EIGHTEENTH CENTURY SPINNING WHEEL

In the Ipswich Museum

MODEL OF ARKWRIGHT'S SPINNING JENNY, 1769

MODEL OF ARKWRIGHT'S SPINNING JENNY, 1769

From the specifications within the Patent Office

The universities of Britain have been at this time in a state of tutorial retrogression, largely given over to a pedantic conning of the Latin and Greek classics. French education, too, became ruled by using the classical subculture of the Jesuit colleges, and consequently it turned into no longer hard for the Germans to prepare a frame of investigators, small indeed with regards to the opportunities of the case, however massive in proportion to the little band of British and French inventors and experimentalists. And even though this paintings of studies and experiment became making Britain and France the most wealthy and powerful countries inside the world, it turned into now not making medical and innovative men wealthy and 362 effective. There is a necessary unworldliness about a sincere clinical guy; he's too preoccupied together with his research to plot and scheme the way to make cash out of it. The financial exploitation of his discoveries falls very easily and evidently, consequently, into the palms of a greater acquisitive kind; and so we find that the plants of rich men which each clean segment of medical and technical development has produced in Great Britain, though they have got not displayed quite the same passionate preference to

insult and kill the goose that laid the countrywide golden eggs because the scholastic and clerical professions, have been quite content material to permit that worthwhile creature starve. Inventors and discoverers got here via nature, they thought, for cleverer human beings to profit by way of.

In this count the Germans have been a bit wiser. The German “found out” did not display the equal vehement hatred of the new getting to know. They approved its improvement. The German commercial enterprise guy and producer again had not pretty the equal contempt for the person of technology as had his British competitor. Knowledge, these Germans believed, might be a cultivated crop, conscious of fertilizers. They did concede, therefore, a positive amount of opportunity to the scientific mind; their public expenditure on clinical work became exceedingly greater, and this expenditure changed into abundantly rewarded. By the latter half of the 19th century the German clinical employee had made German a essential language for each science scholar who wished to preserve abreast with the present day paintings in his branch, and in certain branches, and especially in chemistry, Germany acquired a totally excellent superiority over her western neighbours. The scientific effort of the sixties and seventies in Germany started to tell after the eighties, and the German received progressively upon Britain and France in technical and business prosperity.

A fresh section in the history of invention opened while within the eighties a brand new sort of engine came into use, an engine wherein the expansive force of an explosive mixture changed the expansive force of steam. The light, highly green engines that have been as a result made possible had been applied to the car, and evolved at last to reach this sort of pitch of lightness and performance as to render flight—363long regarded to be viable—a realistic success. A a success flying machine—however not a system large sufficient to absorb a human body—changed into made through Professor Langley

of the Smithsonian Institute of Washington as early as 1897. By 1909 the aeroplane turned into to be had for human locomotion. There had seemed to be a pause in the increase of human velocity with the perfection of railways and automobile road traction, but with the flying gadget got here sparkling reductions inside the powerful distance among one factor of the earth's surface and another. In the eighteenth century the distance from London to Edinburgh become an 8 days' journey; in 1918 the British Civil Air Transport Commission suggested that the journey from London to Melbourne, midway spherical the earth, could in all likelihood in some years' time be done in that equal duration of 8 days.

AN EARLY WEAVING MACHINE

AN EARLY WEAVING MACHINE

From an engraving by way of W. Hincks inside the British Museum

Too a whole lot strain must now not be laid upon these striking discounts within the time distances of 1 vicinity from another. They are simply one issue of a miles profounder and extra momentous enlargement of human possibility. The technological know-how of agriculture and agricultural chemistry, as an example, made pretty parallel advances throughout the nineteenth century. Men learnt so as to fertilize the soil as to produce quadruple and quintuple the vegetation got from the equal place inside the seventeenth century. There turned into a still more terrific enhance in medical technology; the common length of existence rose, the day by day efficiency elevated, the waste of lifestyles through unwell-fitness dwindled.

364 Now right here altogether we have this kind of trade in human lifestyles as to constitute a fresh segment of history. In a little greater than a century this mechanical revolution has been delivered about. In that point man made a stride in the

cloth situations of his lifestyles vaster than he had completed during the entire lengthy c programming language between the palæolithic level and the age of cultivation, or among the times of Pepi in Egypt and those of George III. A new big cloth framework for human affairs has come into existence. Clearly it demands wonderful readjustments of our social, reasonable and political techniques. But these readjustments have necessarily waited upon the development of the mechanical revolution, and they may be still simplest in their opening stage to-day.

365

LVIII

THE INDUSTRIAL REVOLUTION

THERE is an inclination in many histories to confuse collectively what we've got here called the mechanical revolution, which was an entirely new element in human enjoy bobbing up out of the development of prepared technology, a new step just like the invention of agriculture or the discovery of metals, with something else, quite special in its origins, something for which there has been already an historic precedent, the social and monetary improvement that is known as the commercial revolution. The processes had been occurring collectively, they have been constantly reacting upon every other, however they have been in root and essence distinct. There could had been an business revolution of sorts if there had been no coal, no steam, no machinery; but in that case it'd likely have observed some distance more closely upon the strains of the social and monetary developments of the later years of the Roman Republic. It would have repeated the tale of dispossessed loose cultivators, gang labour, notable estates, high-quality economic fortunes, and a socially negative economic system. Even the factory technique got

here earlier than energy and equipment. Factories had been the product no longer of machinery, but of the “department of labour.” Drilled and sweated employees were making things like millinery cardboard boxes and furnishings, and colouring maps and book illustrations and so on, earlier than even water-wheels had been used for industrial purposes. There had been factories in Rome in the days of Augustus. New books, as an instance, have been dictated to rows of copyists within the factories of the e book-sellers. The attentive scholar of Defoe and of the political pamphlets of Fielding will recognize that the concept of herding negative people into institutions to work collectively for his or her living become already present day in Britain earlier than the close of the 17th century. There are intimations of it at the same time as early as More’s Utopia (1516). It became a social and not a mechanical development.

366Up to beyond the center of the eighteenth century the social and monetary records of western Europe became in truth retreading the course along which the Roman kingdom had gone inside the ultimate 3 centuries B.C. But the political disunions of Europe, the political convulsions towards monarchy, the recalcitrance of the common people and perhaps additionally the greater accessibility of the western European intelligence to mechanical thoughts and inventions, became the procedure into pretty novel guidelines. Ideas of human solidarity, thanks to Christianity, were a ways extra widely diffused inside the more moderen European world, political power turned into no longer so focused, and the person of electricity disturbing to get wealthy grew to become his thoughts, consequently, very willingly from the ideas of the slave and of gang labour to the idea of mechanical power and the system.

The mechanical revolution, the method of mechanical invention and discovery, turned into a brand new factor in human experience and it went on no matter the social, political, economic and business effects it’d produce. The

industrial revolution, then again, like maximum other human affairs, become and is more and more profoundly modified and deflected by using the steady variation in human conditions because of the mechanical revolution. And the important difference between the gathering of riches, the extinction of small farmers and small commercial enterprise men, and the section of huge finance within the latter centuries of the Roman Republic on the one hand, and the very comparable concentration of capital within the eighteenth and 19th centuries on the other, lies in the profound difference inside the character of labour that the mechanical revolution become bringing about. The strength of the old international become human strength; everything depended in the long run upon the driving energy of human muscle, the muscle of ignorant and subjugated guys. A little animal muscle, furnished by using draft oxen, horse traction etc, contributed. Where a weight had to be lifted, guys lifted it; wherein a rock needed to be quarried, guys chipped it out; where a area had to be ploughed, guys and oxen ploughed it; the Roman equivalent of the steamship was the galley with its bank of sweating rowers. A good sized share of mankind inside the early civilizations had been employed in purely mechanical drudgery. At its onset, electricity-driven equipment did not appear to vow any launch from such unintelligent toil. Great gangs 367of men have been employed in excavating canals, in making railway cuttings and embankments, etc. The variety of miners extended incredibly. But the extension of centers and the output of commodities improved plenty extra. And because the nineteenth century went on, the apparent common sense of the new scenario asserted itself greater simply. Human beings were not desired as a supply of mere indiscriminated power. What might be done automatically by using a human being can be done faster and higher through a device. The human being changed into needed now handiest in which choice and intelligence had to be exercised. Human beings were desired most effective as people. The drudge, on whom all of the previous civilizations had rested, the creature of mere

obedience, the man whose brains have been superfluous, had grow to be needless to the welfare of mankind.

INCIDENT IN THE DAYS OF THE SLAVE TRADE

INCIDENT IN THE DAYS OF THE SLAVE TRADE

From a print after Morland in the British Museum

This turned into as proper of such ancient industries as agriculture and mining as it changed into of the most modern metallurgical strategies. For ploughing, sowing and harvesting, speedy machines came ahead to do the work of ratings of men. The Roman civilization became constructed upon 368cheap and degraded people; modern-day civilization is being rebuilt upon cheap mechanical electricity. For 100 years energy has been getting less expensive and labour dearer. If for a technology or so machinery has needed to wait its turn in the mine, it is simply because for a time guys have been cheaper than equipment.

EARLY FACTORY, IN COLEBROOKDALE

EARLY FACTORY, IN COLEBROOKDALE

From a print the British Museum

Now right here became a trade-over of pretty primary significance in human affairs. The leader solicitude of the wealthy and of the ruler inside the antique civilization had been to preserve up a supply of drudges. As the nineteenth century went on, it became increasingly undeniable to the sensible directive people that the commonplace man had now to be something higher than a drudge. He had to be knowledgeable—if simplest to relaxed “business efficiency.” He needed to apprehend what he changed into approximately. From the days of the first Christian propaganda, popular schooling have been smouldering in Europe, simply as it had smouldered in Asia wherever Islam has set its foot, due to the need of making the believer recognize a bit of the notion

through which he is saved, and of permitting him to study a bit in the sacred books by which his belief is conveyed. Christian controversies, with their competition for adherents, ploughed the ground for the harvest of popular schooling. In England, for instance, with the aid of the thirties and forties of the 19th century, the disputes of the sects and the need of catching adherents younger had produced a chain of competing educational agencies for children, the church "National" colleges, the dissenting "British" faculties, and even Roman Catholic simple colleges. The 2d 1/2 of the nineteenth century was a duration of speedy enhance in popular training in the course of all of the Westernized international. There turned into no parallel advance inside the education of the top training—a few enhance, no doubt, but nothing to correspond—and so the tremendous gulf that had divided that international hitherto into the readers and the non-studying mass became little extra than a barely perceptible distinction in instructional stage. At the back of this procedure turned into the mechanical revolution, reputedly irrespective of social conditions, but certainly insisting inexorably upon the whole abolition of a completely illiterate elegance all through the arena.

The economic revolution of the Roman Republic had never been virtually apprehended by way of the common human beings of Rome. The normal Roman citizen by no means saw the modifications through which he lived, really and comprehensively as we see them. But the economic revolution, as it went on in the direction of the quit of the 19th century, changed into increasingly notably seen as one whole technique by using the common humans it turned into affecting, due to the fact currently they might study and speak and talk, and because they went approximately and noticed things as no commonalty had ever carried out earlier than.

LIX

THE DEVELOPMENT OF MODERN POLITICAL AND SOCIAL IDEAS

THE establishments and customs and political thoughts of the historic civilizations grew up slowly, age by means of age, no guy designing and no man foreseeing. It turned into only in that notable century of human youth, the sixth century B.C., that men started to suppose truly about their relations to each other, and primary to impeach and primary propose to modify and rearrange the established beliefs and legal guidelines and strategies of human government.

We have instructed of the wonderful highbrow sunrise of Greece and Alexandria, and the way currently the fall apart of the slave- conserving civilizations and the clouds of religious intolerance and absolutist government darkened the promise of that starting. The mild of fearless thinking did not spoil thru the European obscurity once more efficaciously until the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries. We have attempted to expose some thing of the share of the excellent winds of Arab curiosity and Mongol conquest in this slow clearing of the mental skies of Europe. And before everything it became chiefly fabric understanding that improved. The first fruits of the recovered manhood of the race have been fabric achievements and material energy. The technology of human dating, of person and social psychology, of education and of economics, aren't best greater diffused and intricate in themselves but additionally certain up inextricably with a great deal emotional count. The advances made in them had been slower and made towards extra competition. Men will listen dispassionately to the maximum numerous guidelines approximately stars or molecules, but thoughts approximately our approaches of existence touch and replicate upon every body approximately us.

And simply as in Greece the ambitious speculations of Plato got here before Aristotle's difficult look for truth, so in Europe the primary political enquiries of the brand new phase have been put within the shape of "Utopian" memories, at once imitated from Plato's Republic and his Laws. Sir Thomas More's Utopia is a curious imitation of Plato that bore fruit in a new English bad law. The Neapolitan Campanella's City of the Sun was more notable and much less fruitful.

By the quit of the seventeenth century we find a full-size and developing literature of political and social technology become being produced. Among the pioneers on this dialogue turned into John Locke, the son of an English republican, an Oxford scholar who first directed his attention to chemistry and remedy. His treatises on authorities, toleration and education display a thoughts completely wide awake to the possibilities of social reconstruction. Parallel with and a little later than John Locke in England, Montesquieu (1689-1755) in France subjected social, political and non secular institutions to a looking and fundamental analysis. He stripped the mystical status from the absolutist monarchy in France. He stocks with Locke the credit score for clearing away many of the fake thoughts that had hitherto averted deliberate and conscious attempts to reconstruct human society.

The generation that observed him within the middle and later decades of the eighteenth century turned into boldly speculative upon the ethical and intellectual clearings he had made. A group of terrific writers, the "Encyclopædists," on the whole rebellion spirits from the first rate schools of the Jesuits, set themselves to scheme out a new international (1766). Side by way of aspect with the Encyclopædists have been the Economists or Physiocrats, who have been making bold and crude enquiries into the production and distribution of food and items. Morelly, the writer of the Code de La Nature,

denounced the organization of personal assets and proposed a communistic organisation of society. He became the precursor of that big and various college of collectivist thinkers inside the nineteenth century who are lumped collectively as Socialists.

What is Socialism? There are a hundred definitions of Socialism and 1000 sects of Socialists. Essentially Socialism is no more and no much less than a complaint of the concept of property within the light of the public properly. We can also assessment the records of that concept thru the a long time very in short. That and the concept of internationalism are the two cardinal thoughts upon which most of our political life is turning.

372

CARL MARX

CARL MARX

Photo: Linde & Co.

The concept of assets arises out of the combative instincts of the species. Long earlier than men were men, the ancestral ape was a proprietor. Primitive property is what a beast will fight for. The canine and his bone, the tigress and her lair, the roaring stag and his herd, those are proprietorship blazing. No more nonsensical expression is plausible in sociology than the term "primitive communism." The Old Man of the family tribe of early palæolithic times insisted upon his proprietorship in his wives and daughters, in his tools, in his visible universe. If another guy wandered into his seen universe he fought him, and if he ought to he slew him. The tribe grew in the course of ages, as Atkinson showed convincingly in his Primal Law, by means of the slow toleration by the Old Man of the life of the younger men, and of their proprietorship in the better halves they captured from out of doors the tribe, and within the gear and adorns they made and the game they slew. Human society

grew by using a compromise among this one's belongings and that. It was a compromise with intuition which changed into forced upon men through the necessity of using some other tribe out of its visible universe. If the hills and forests and streams had been now not your land or my land, it turned into due to the fact they had to be our land. Each folks might have desired to have it my land, however that might not work. In that case the opposite fellows would have destroyed us. Society, therefore, is from its starting a mitigation of possession. Ownership inside the beast and within the primitive savage became some distance more extreme a element than it's far inside the civilized global to-day. It is rooted extra strongly in our instincts than in our cause.

In the natural savage and inside the untutored guy to-day there may be no limitation to the sector of ownership. Whatever you may fight for, you may own; women-people, spared captive, captured beast, woodland glade, stone-pit or what not. As the community grew, a sort of regulation got here to restrain internecine preventing, men evolved rough-and-equipped techniques of settling proprietorship. Men should very own what they were the primary to make or seize or declare. It regarded herbal that a debtor who couldn't pay have to emerge as the property of his creditor. Equally herbal turned into it that once claiming a patch of land a man need to specific payments from absolutely everyone who wanted to apply it. It changed into most effective slowly, as the opportunities of organized existence dawned on men, that this unlimited assets in whatever whatever commenced to be recognized as a nuisance. Men observed themselves born into a universe all owned and claimed, nay! They determined themselves born owned and claimed. The social struggles of the sooner civilization are tough to trace now, but the records we've told of the Roman Republic suggests a network waking as much as the concept that money owed may become a public inconvenience and must then be repudiated, and that the limitless possession of land is likewise an inconvenience. We

374 find that later Babylonia severely limited the rights of property in slaves. Finally, we discover within the teaching of that first rate revolutionist, Jesus of Nazareth, such an attack upon property as had by no means been earlier than. Easier it changed into, he said, for a camel to undergo the attention of a needle than for the owner of super possessions to enter the dominion of heaven. A steady, continuous grievance of the permissible scope of property seems to have been occurring inside the international for the last twenty-5 or thirty centuries. Nineteen hundred years after Jesus of Nazareth we discover all the world that has come beneath the Christian coaching persuaded that there might be no property in humans. And additionally the concept that a man may “do what he likes with his personal” was very tons shaken with regards to other varieties of assets.

But this international of the ultimate eighteenth century become still handiest in the interrogative stage in this count. It had got not anything clear enough, an awful lot much less settled enough, to act upon. One of its number one impulses was to shield belongings against the greed and waste of kings and the exploitation of noble adventurers. It was in large part to protect private assets from taxation that the French Revolution began. But the equalitarian formulæ of the Revolution carried it right into a criticism of the very belongings it had risen to shield. How can guys be unfastened and equal while numbers of them have no ground to stand upon and nothing to devour, and the proprietors will neither feed nor lodge them until they toil? Excessively—the terrible complained.

To which riddle the reply of one critical political group become to set about “dividing up.” They wanted to heighten and universalize belongings. Aiming on the same quit by using any other course, there were the primitive socialists—or, to be more precise, communists—who desired to “abolish” personal

assets altogether. The country (a democratic country changed into of route understood) turned into to personal all assets.

It is paradoxical that unique men in search of the identical ends of liberty and happiness ought to suggest on the one hand to make belongings as absolute as possible, and on the opposite to position an quit to it altogether. But so it changed into. And the clue to this paradox is to be observed within the truth that possession is not one aspect however a multitude of various matters.

375It changed into only because the 19th century advanced that men began to recognize that assets changed into now not one simple issue, but a first-rate complicated of ownerships of different values and effects, that many things (which includes one's body, the implements of an artist, clothing, toothbrushes) are very profoundly and incurably one's private belongings, and that there is a completely excellent variety of things, railways, machinery of numerous kinds, houses, cultivated gardens, pride boats, for instance, which want every to be considered very mainly to decide how far and below what barriers it could come underneath non-public ownership, and the way some distance it falls into the general public domain and can be administered and let loose by way of the country in the collective interest. On the sensible aspect those questions skip into politics, and the trouble of making and sustaining green country management. They open up problems in social psychology, and interact with the enquiries of instructional technological know-how. The complaint of assets continues to be a enormous and passionate ferment instead of a technology. On the one hand are the Individualists, who could protect and enlarge our present freedoms with what we own, and on the opposite the Socialists who might in lots of directions pool our ownerships and restrain our proprietary acts. In practice one will locate each gradation among the intense individualist, who will scarcely tolerate a tax of any kind to assist a government, and the communist who might deny any

possessions in any respect. The everyday socialist of to-day is what is called a collectivist; he could permit a large amount of personal property however positioned such affairs as training, delivery, mines, land-owning, most mass productions of staple articles, etc, into the arms of a surprisingly organized state. Nowadays there does seem to be a slow convergence of affordable guys in the direction of a mild socialism scientifically studied and deliberate. It is realized an increasing number of simply that the untutored guy does now not co-perform without difficulty and efficaciously in large undertakings, and that every step in the direction of a extra complicated nation and each function that the nation takes over from private employer, necessitates a corresponding educational boost and the agency of a right grievance and manage. Both the clicking and the political strategies of the modern nation are a ways too crude for any huge extension of collective sports.

But for a time the stresses between business enterprise and employed and 376mainly among selfish employers and reluctant workers, caused a world-huge dissemination of the very harsh and elementary shape of communism which is associated with the call of Marx. Marx based totally his theories on a perception that guys's minds are limited by using their economic necessities, and that there is a important battle of interests in our gift civilization between the prosperous and employing instructions of human beings and the hired mass. With the development in training necessitated through the mechanical revolution, this tremendous hired majority becomes increasingly magnificence-conscious and an increasing number of solid in antagonism to the (elegance-aware) ruling minority. In a few manner the elegance-aware employees might seize electricity, he prophesied, and inaugurate a brand new social state. The antagonism, the rebel, the viable revolution are comprehensible enough, but it does no longer observe that a new social state or whatever however a socially destructive technique will take place. Put to the

check in Russia, Marxism, as we will word later, has proved singularly uncreative.

SCIENCE IN THE COAL MINE

SCIENCE IN THE COAL MINE

Portable Electric Loading Conveyor

Photo: Jeffrey Manufacturing Company, Columbus, Ohio

377Marx sought to replace countrywide antagonism by using elegance antagonisms; Marxism has produced in succession a First, a Second and a Third Workers' International. But from the place to begin of contemporary individualistic idea it is also feasible to reach international ideas. From the times of that brilliant English economist, Adam Smith, onward there has been an increasing consciousness that for international-wide prosperity unfastened and unencumbered trade approximately the earth is needed. The individualist along with his hostility to the nation is adversarial also to price lists and limitations and all of the restraints upon free act and movement that countrywide barriers seem to justify. It is interesting to peer two strains of concept, so numerous in spirit, so different in substance as this magnificence-conflict socialism of the Marxists and the individualistic unfastened-buying and selling philosophy of the British business guys of the Victorian age heading at closing, in spite of these number one differences, towards the same intimations of a new international-wide remedy of human affairs out of doors the limits and obstacles of any present country. The good judgment of truth triumphs over the good judgment of concept. We begin to perceive that from extensively divergent beginning points individualist principle and socialist idea are a part of a common seek, a look for more spacious social and political thoughts and interpretations, upon which guys can also contrive to work collectively, a seek that started out again in Europe and has intensified as men's self assurance inside the thoughts of the Holy Roman Empire and in Christendom decayed, and because the age of discovery broadened their

horizons from the world of the Mediterranean to the whole huge international.

To carry this description of the elaboration and development of social, economic and political thoughts proper all the way down to the discussions of the contemporary, might be to introduce problems altogether too debatable for the scope and intentions of this ebook. But concerning these things, as we do here, from the substantial perspectives of the student of global history, we're certain to understand that this reconstruction of these directive ideas in the human thoughts continues to be an unfinished challenge—we can not even estimate yet how unfinished the project may be. Certain not unusual beliefs do appear to be rising, and their influence may be very perceptible upon the political activities and public acts of today; however at gift they are not clear sufficient nor convincing sufficient to compel men really and systematically closer to their realization. 378Men's acts waver among tradition and the new, and at the whole they rather gravitate in the direction of the traditional. Yet, compared with the concept of even a brief lifetime ago, there does seem to be an outline shaping itself of a new order in human affairs. It is a sketchy outline, vanishing into vagueness at this point and that, 379and fluctuating in detail and formulæ, yet it grows steadfastly clearer, and its major lines alternate much less and much less.

CONSTRUCTIONAL DETAIL OF THE FORTH BRIDGE CONSTRUCTIONAL DETAIL OF THE FORTH BRIDGE

Photo: Baker & Hurtzig

It is turning into plainer and plainer each yr that in many respects and in an growing variety of affairs, mankind is becoming one network, and that it's miles an increasing number of necessary that in such topics there ought to be a common global-wide manipulate. For instance, it's miles gradually more true that the complete planet is now one

financial network, that the proper exploitation of its herbal resources needs one complete direction, and that the more power and variety that discovery has given human effort makes the present fragmentary and contentious management of such affairs increasingly more wasteful and dangerous. Financial and monetary expedients also emerge as world-extensive pursuits to be treated correctly handiest on global-extensive traces. Infectious sicknesses and the increase and migrations of populace are also now plainly seen to be international-wide worries. The more strength and range of human sports has also made battle disproportionately negative and disorganizing, and, while an inept way of settling problems among government and authorities and those and people, useless. All these items clamour for controls and authorities of a more variety and extra comprehensiveness than any government that has hitherto existed.

But it does now not observe that the solution of those issues lies in some exceptional-authorities of all the world springing up by way of conquest or via the coalescence of existing governments. By analogy with current institutions men have idea of the Parliament of Mankind, of a World Congress, of a President or Emperor of the Earth. Our first natural response is toward a few such end, however the dialogue and experiences of 1/2 a century of hints and tries has at the complete discouraged belief in that first apparent concept. Along that line to global cohesion the resistances are too wonderful. The glide of idea seems now to be inside the course of some of unique committees or agencies, with global-huge power delegated to them by means of existing governments in this group of topics or that, our bodies involved with the waste or development of natural wealth, with the equalization of labour conditions, with international peace, with foreign money, populace and health, and so forth.

380The world may additionally find out that every one its commonplace pursuits are being controlled as one problem,

while it nevertheless fails to understand that an international government exists. But before even so much human team spirit is attained, before such worldwide arrangements may be placed above patriotic suspicions and jealousies, it's miles vital that the common mind of the race ought to be possessed of that concept of human team spirit, and that the concept of mankind as one own family need to be a matter of normal training and knowledge.

For a score of centuries or greater the spirit of the great conventional religions has been struggling to keep and enlarge that idea of a popular human brotherhood, however to this day the spites, angers and distrusts of tribal, country wide and racial friction obstruct, and effectively impede, the broader views and greater generous impulses which would make every guy the servant of all mankind. The concept of human brotherhood struggles now to possess the human soul, just because the idea of Christendom struggled to own the soul of Europe within the confusion and disorder of the 6th and seventh centuries of the Christian technology. The dissemination and triumph of such ideas need to be the work of a mess of dedicated and undistinguished missionaries, and no modern writer can presume to bet how a long way such work has long past or what harvest it is able to be making ready.

Social and economic questions appear to be inseparably mingled with international ones. The solution in every case lies in an enchantment to that same spirit of carrier that may enter and inspire the human heart. The distrust, intractability and egotism of nations displays and is contemplated via the distrust, intractability and egotism of the person owner and employee inside the face of the commonplace true. Exaggerations of possessiveness in the individual are parallel and of a piece with the clutching greed of countries and emperors. They are products of the equal instinctive inclinations, and the identical ignorances and traditions.

Internationalism is the socialism of nations. No one who has wrestled with these issues can sense that there yet exists a enough intensity and electricity of psychological technological know-how and a sufficiently planned-out academic technique and employer for any actual and final answer of those riddles of human sex and cooperation. We are as incapable of planning a definitely effective peace company of the sector today as have been guys in 1820 to plot an 381 electric railway device, however for all we recognise the thing is equally viable and may be as almost to hand.

No man can cross beyond his own understanding, no thought can reach beyond contemporary notion, and it's miles not possible for us to wager or foretell what number of generations of humanity may additionally must live in conflict and waste and insecurity and distress earlier than the dawn of the splendid peace to which all records appears to be pointing, peace inside the coronary heart and peace inside the world, ends our night of wasteful and aimless residing. Our proposed solutions are nevertheless vague and crude. Passion and suspicion surround them. A high-quality venture of intellectual reconstruction goes on, it is nevertheless incomplete, and our conceptions develop clearer and extra exact—slowly, rapidly, it's miles hard to tell which. But as they develop clearer they'll acquire electricity over the minds and imaginations of guys. Their gift lack of grip is because of their loss of warranty and exact rightness. They are misunderstood due to the fact they may be variously and confusingly supplied. But with precision and certainty the brand new imaginative and prescient of the sector will benefit compelling strength. It may additionally presently gain power very hastily. And a top notch paintings of educational reconstruction will observe logically and necessarily upon that clearer knowledge.

LX

THE EXPANSION OF THE UNITED STATES

THE region of the sector that displayed the maximum immediately and striking effects from the new inventions in delivery become North America. Politically the US embodied, and its charter crystallized, the liberal ideas of the middle eighteenth century. It distributed with state-church or crown, it'd have no titles, it protected belongings very jealously as a way of freedom, and—the exact exercise varied at first inside the unique states—it gave almost every person male citizen a vote. Its technique of balloting became barbarically crude, and accordingly its political existence fell very soon below the manage of extraordinarily organized birthday party machines, but that did no longer prevent the newly emancipated population growing an strength, agency and public spirit far past that of every other present day population.

Then came that acceleration of locomotion to which we've got already referred to as attention. It is a curious factor that America, which owes most to this acceleration in locomotion, has felt it least. The United States have taken the railway, the river steamboat, the telegraph and so forth as though they had been a herbal a part of their growth. They have been now not. These matters took place to come along just in time to store American unity. The United States of to-day have been made first with the aid of the river steamboat, after which with the aid of the railway. Without these things, the prevailing United States, this huge continental nation, would were altogether impossible. The westward waft of population could had been a ways more gradual. It might never have crossed the extremely good significant plains. It took nearly two hundred years for powerful agreement to attain from the coast to Missouri, plenty much less than midway across the continent. The first state set up beyond the river changed into the steamboat

country of Missouri in 1821. But the relaxation of the distance to the Pacific became carried out in some many years.

383If we had the resources of the cinema it might be thrilling to show a map of North America year via 12 months from 1600 onward, with little dots to represent masses of people, every dot a hundred, and stars to symbolize towns of 100 thousand humans.

For hundred years the reader might see that stippling creeping slowly along the coastal districts and navigable waters, spreading nevertheless more step by step into Indiana, Kentucky and so on. Then someplace about 1810 would come a exchange. Things might get greater lively along the river courses. The dots would be multiplying and spreading. That will be the steamboat. The pioneer dots would be spreading quickly over Kansas and Nebraska from a number of jumping-off locations along the exceptional rivers.

Then from approximately 1850 onward might come the black strains of the railways, and after that the little black dots would no longer certainly creep but run. They would seem now so unexpectedly, it'd be almost as even though they were being placed on through some kind of spraying gadget. And unexpectedly right here and then there might appear the first stars to indicate the first excellent towns of one hundred thousand human beings. First one or two and then a large number of towns—each like a knot in the growing internet of the railways.

The boom of the United States is a technique that has no precedent inside the global's history; it's miles a brand new type of occurrence. Such a community couldn't have come into existence before, and if it had, without railways it would honestly have dropped to portions lengthy before now.

Without railways or telegraph it might be a ways easier to manage California from Pekin than from Washington. But this remarkable population of the United States of America has not best grown outrageously; it has kept uniform. Nay, it has end up more uniform. The man of San Francisco is more just like the man of New York to-day than the person of Virginia became like the guy of New England a century in the past. And the system of assimilation is going on unimpeded. The United States is being woven via railway, by means of telegraph, increasingly into one great cohesion, speakme, wondering and appearing harmoniously with itself. Soon aviation might be assisting in the paintings.

This awesome network of the USA is an altogether new factor in records. There have been notable empires before with populations exceeding 100 hundreds of thousands, but these were associations of divergent 384peoples; there has in no way been one unmarried humans on this scale earlier than. We need a new term for this new thing. We name america a rustic just as we call France or Holland a country. But the two matters are as extraordinary as an vehicle and a one-horse shay. They are the creations of different periods and distinct conditions; they are going to work at a specific tempo and in a completely special way. The United States in scale and opportunity is halfway among a European state and a United States of all of the world.

But on the manner to this gift greatness and safety the American people passed thru one segment of dire war. The river steamboats, the railways, the telegraph, and their accomplice centers, did now not come quickly enough to avoid a deepening war of hobbies and ideas among the southern and northern states of the Union. The former have been slave-retaining states; the latter, states wherein all guys were free. The railways and steamboats before everything did however bring into sharper struggle an already established difference between the two sections of the United States. The

increasing unification due to the new means of transport made the query whether or not the southern spirit or the northern need to prevail an ever extra pressing one. There became little possibility of compromise. The northern spirit became unfastened and individualistic; the southern made for brilliant estates and a aware gentility ruling over a dusky issue multitude.

Every new territory that became organized right into a nation as the tide of population swept westward, every new incorporation into the quick developing American device, became a subject of battle between the two thoughts, whether or not it need to come to be a country of free citizens, or whether the estate and slavery gadget ought to be successful. From 1833 an American anti-slavery society changed into not merely resisting the extension of the institution however agitating the complete usa for its entire abolition. The problem flamed up into open warfare over the admission of Texas to the Union. Texas had at the beginning been part of the republic of Mexico, but it become largely colonized through Americans from the slave-keeping states, and it seceded from Mexico, mounted its independence in 1835, and turned into annexed to america in 1844. Under the Mexican regulation slavery have been forbidden in Texas, however now the South claimed Texas for slavery and got it.

385 Meanwhile the improvement of ocean navigation became bringing a growing swarm of immigrants from Europe to swell the spreading populace of the northern states, and the raising of Iowa, Wisconsin, Minnesota and Oregon, all northern farm lands, to state stage, gave the anti-slavery North the possibility of predominance each within the Senate and the House of Representatives. The cotton- growing South, indignant with the aid of the developing danger of the Abolitionist motion, and fearing this predominance in Congress, started to speak of secession from the Union. Southerners started out to dream of annexations to the south of them in Mexico and the West

Indies, and of remarkable slave country, indifferent from the North and accomplishing to Panama.

The return of Abraham Lincoln as an anti-extension President in 1860 determined the South to split the Union. South Carolina handed an “ordinance of secession” and organized for battle. Mississippi, Florida, Alabama, Georgia, Louisiana and Texas joined her, and a convention met at Sir Bernard Law in Alabama, elected Jefferson Davis president of the “Confederated States” of America, and adopted a charter specially upholding “the institution of negro slavery.”

ONE OF THE FIRST AMERICAN RIVER STEAMERS

ONE OF THE FIRST AMERICAN RIVER STEAMERS

386 Abraham Lincoln was, it chanced, a man absolutely standard of the brand new human beings that had grown up after the War of Independence. His early years have been spent as a drifting particle in the trendy westward go with the flow of the population. He became born in Kentucky (1809), changed into taken to Indiana as a boy and in a while to Illinois. Life become tough inside the backwoods of Indiana in the ones days; the residence became an insignificant log cabin within the wasteland, and his education changed into terrible and informal. But his mother taught him to examine early, and he became a voracious reader. At seventeen he turned into a large athletic children, a high-quality wrestler and runner. He worked for a time as clerk in a shop, went into business as a storekeeper with a drunken associate, and shriveled debts that he did now not absolutely repay for fifteen years. In 1834, while he became nevertheless best 5 and twenty, he become elected member of the House of Representatives for the State of Illinois. In Illinois mainly the question of slavery flamed due to the fact the extraordinary chief of the celebration for the extension of slavery within the country wide Congress turned into Senator Douglas of Illinois. Douglas turned into a man of splendid potential and prestige, and for a few years Lincoln

fought towards him by means of speech and pamphlet, growing step by step to the placement of his most bold and in the end effective antagonist. Their culminating warfare changed into the presidential campaign of 1860, and on the fourth of March, 1861, Lincoln turned into inaugurated President, with the southern states already in energetic secession from the guideline of the federal authorities at Washington, and committing acts of conflict.

This civil battle in America became fought by means of improvised armies that grew steadily from a few score hundreds to masses of heaps—till at closing the Federal forces handed a million men; it become fought over a extensive region between New Mexico and the jap sea, Washington and Richmond had been the chief objectives. It is beyond our scope right here to tell of the mounting power of that epic warfare that rolled to and fro throughout the hills and woods of Tennessee and Virginia and down the Mississippi. There become a horrible waste and killing of men. Thrust turned into followed through counter thrust; wish gave manner to despondency, and lower back and turned into once more upset. Sometimes Washington regarded within the Confederate hold close; once more the Federal armies were riding closer to Richmond. The Confederates, outnumbered and some distance poorer in assets, fought below 387a fashionable of supreme capacity, General Lee. The generalship of the Union become far inferior. Generals had been brushed off, new generals appointed; till at remaining, below Sherman and Grant, came victory over the ragged and depleted South. In October, 1864, a Federal military underneath Sherman broke thru the Confederate left and marched down from Tennessee via Georgia to the coast, proper throughout the Confederate us of a, after which became up through the 388 Carolinas, coming in upon the rear of the Confederate armies. Meanwhile Grant held Lee before Richmond until Sherman closed on him. On April 9th, 1865, Lee and his navy surrendered at Appomattox Court House, and inside a month all the final secessionist

armies had laid down their fingers and the Confederacy was at an cease.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN

ABRAHAM LINCOLN

This four years' war had intended an good sized bodily and ethical pressure for the people of the United States. The precept of kingdom autonomy become very dear to many minds, and the North regarded in impact to be forcing abolition upon the South. In the border states brothers and cousins, even fathers and sons, could take opposite facets and discover themselves in antagonistic armies. The North felt its cause a righteous one, but for extraordinary numbers of humans it was not a complete-bodied and unchallenged righteousness. But for Lincoln there was no doubt. He became a clear-minded man inside the midst of lots confusion. He stood for union; he stood for the extensive peace of America. He turned into against slavery, however slavery he held to be a secondary difficulty; his number one cause was that the United States have to not be torn into two contrasted and jarring fragments.

When within the opening degrees of the battle Congress and the Federal generals embarked upon a precipitate emancipation, Lincoln adverse and mitigated their enthusiasm. He become for emancipation via levels and with reimbursement. It turned into most effective in January, 1865, that the state of affairs had ripened to a degree whilst Congress ought to advocate to abolish slavery for ever by way of a constitutional modification, and the struggle changed into already over earlier than this modification became ratified with the aid of the states.

As the warfare dragged on via 1862 and 1863, the primary passions and enthusiasms waned, and America learnt all the

phases of conflict weariness and struggle disgust. The President located himself with defeatists, traitors, disregarded generals, tortuous celebration politicians, and a doubting and fatigued humans in the back of him and uninspired generals and depressed troops earlier than him; his chief comfort should have been that Jefferson Davis at Richmond could be in little higher case. The English authorities misbehaved, and permitted the Confederate sellers in England to release and man three speedy privateer ships—the Alabama is the pleasant remembered of them—which chased United States delivery from the seas. The French navy in Mexico become trampling the Monroe Doctrine in the dust. Came diffused proposals from Richmond to drop the conflict, leave the problems of the struggle for next discussion, and flip, Federal and Confederate in alliance, upon the French in Mexico. But Lincoln could now not concentrate to such proposals unless the supremacy of the Union was maintained. The Americans might do such things as one people however no longer as two.

He held the US together thru lengthy weary months of reverses and useless attempt, through black levels of division and failing courage; and there's no record that he ever faltered from his reason. There have been instances while there has been nothing to be carried out, whilst he sat in the White House silent and immobile, a grim monument of clear up; instances whilst he comfy his thoughts by using jesting and huge anecdotes.

He saw the Union effective. He entered Richmond the day after its surrender, and heard of Lee's capitulation. He lower back to Washington, and on April eleventh made his remaining public cope with. His topic changed into reconciliation and the reconstruction of unswerving government inside the defeated states. On the evening of April 14th he went to Ford's theatre in Washington, and as he sat searching on the stage, he changed into shot inside the returned of the top and killed by means of an actor named Booth who had some form of

grievance in opposition to him, and who had crept into the container unobserved. But Lincoln's paintings became performed; the Union become stored.

At the beginning of the conflict there has been no railway to the Pacific coast; after it the railways spread like a unexpectedly growing plant till now they have got clutched and held and woven all the full-size territory of the United States into one indissoluble mental and cloth harmony—the greatest real community—until the commonplace people of China have learnt to study—in the global.

390

LXI

THE RISE OF GERMANY TO PREDOMINANCE IN EUROPE

WE have advised how after the convulsion of the French Revolution and the Napoleonic journey, Europe settled down again for a time to an insecure peace and a sort of modernized revival of the political conditions of fifty years earlier than. Until the middle of the century the new centers in the managing of steel and the railway and steamship produced no marked political outcomes. But the social tension due to the development of urban industrialism grew. France remained a conspicuously uneasy united states. The revolution of 1830 became followed by way of any other in 1848. Then Napoleon III, a nephew of Napoleon Bonaparte, have become first President, after which (in 1852) Emperor.

He set about rebuilding Paris, and modified it from a picturesque seventeenth century insanitary city into the spacious Latinized town of marble it's far to-day. He set

approximately rebuilding France, and made it into a remarkable-searching modernized imperialism. He displayed a disposition to restore that competitiveness of the Great Powers which had stored Europe busy with futile wars throughout the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. The Tsar Nicholas I of Russia (1825- 1856) become additionally becoming competitive and pressing southward upon the Turkish Empire with his eyes on Constantinople.

After the turn of the century Europe broke out into a fresh cycle of wars. They were chiefly “stability-of- electricity” and ascendancy wars. England, France and Sardinia assailed Russia within the Crimean conflict in defence of Turkey; Prussia (with Italy as an best friend) and Austria fought for the management of Germany, France liberated North Italy from Austria at the rate of Savoy, and Italy gradually unified itself into one state. Then Napoleon III was so ill suggested as to strive adventures in Mexico, throughout the American Civil War; he installation an Emperor Maximilian there and abandoned him swiftly to 391his fate—he became shot by means of the Mexicans—while the victorious Federal Government showed its teeth.

Map of Europe, 1848-1871

In 1870 got here an extended-pending struggle for predominance in Europe between France and Prussia. Prussia had long foreseen and organized for this war, and France changed into rotten with economic corruption. Her defeat become swift and dramatic. The Germans invaded France in August, one superb French army beneath the Emperor capitulated at Sedan in September, some other surrendered in October at Metz, and in January 1871, Paris, after a siege and bombardment, fell into German arms. Peace become signed at Frankfort surrendering the provinces of Alsace and Lorraine to the Germans. 392Germany, with the exception of Austria, become unified as an empire, and the King of Prussia become

brought to the galaxy of European Cæsars, as the German Emperor.

For the subsequent 40-3 years Germany was the leading power upon the European continent. There changed into a Russo-Turkish war in 1877-eight, but thereafter, besides for positive readjustments in the Balkans, European frontiers remained uneasily stable for thirty years.

393

LXII

THE NEW OVERSEAS EMPIRES OF STEAMSHIP AND RAILWAY

THE cease of the eighteenth century turned into a length of disrupting empires and disappointed expansionists. The long and tedious journey between Britain and Spain and their colonies in America avoided any certainly loose coming and going among the home land and the daughter lands, and so the colonies separated into new and wonderful groups, with specific thoughts and pastimes and even modes of speech. As they grew they strained increasingly at the feeble and uncertain hyperlink of delivery that had joined them. Weak buying and selling-posts within the wasteland, like those of France in Canada, or buying and selling institutions in extremely good alien communities, like the ones of Britain in India, may well cling for bare existence to the kingdom which gave them support and a motive for his or her lifestyles. That an awful lot and no more seemed to many thinkers in the early a part of the nineteenth century to be the limit set to foreign places rule. In 1820 the sketchy fantastic European "empires" outdoor of Europe that had figured so bravely within the maps of the center eighteenth century, had shrunken to very small

dimensions. Only the Russian sprawled as large as ever across Asia.

The British Empire in 1815 consisted of the thinly populated coastal river and lake regions of Canada, and a awesome hinterland of desolate tract in which the simplest settlements as but had been the fur-buying and selling stations of the Hudson Bay Company, about a 3rd of the Indian peninsula, underneath the guideline of the East India Company, the coast districts of the Cape of Good Hope inhabited with the aid of blacks and rebellious-lively Dutch settlers; some trading stations at the coast of West Africa, the rock of Gibraltar, the island of Malta, Jamaica, some minor slave-labour possessions inside the West Indies, British Guiana in South America, and, on the other aspect of the world, dumps for convicts at Botany Bay in Australia and in Tasmania. Spain retained Cuba and some settlements within the Philippine Islands. 394Portugal had in Africa some vestiges of her ancient claims. Holland had numerous islands and possessions in the East Indies and Dutch Guiana, and Denmark an island or so inside the West Indies. France had one or West Indian islands and French Guiana. This regarded to be as tons as the European powers needed, or had been probably to accumulate of the relaxation of the arena. Only the East India Company confirmed any spirit of growth.

While Europe became busy with the Napoleonic wars the East India Company, below a succession of Governors-General, become playing tons the equal role in India that have been played earlier than by Turkoman and such-like invaders from the north. And after the peace of Vienna it went on, levying its revenues, making wars, sending ambassadors to Asiatic powers, a quasi- independent kingdom, however, with a marked disposition to ship wealth westward.

We can not inform right here in any detail how the British Company made its manner to supremacy sometimes as the

best friend of this energy, every now and then as that, and ultimately as the conqueror of all. Its power unfolded to Assam, Sind, Oudh. The map of India started out to take at the outlines acquainted to the English schoolboy of to-day, a patchwork of native states embraced and held collectively via the excellent provinces below direct British rule... .

In 1859, following upon a severe mutiny of the local troops in India, this empire of the East India Company became annexed to the British Crown. By an Act entitled An Act for the Better Government of India, the Governor-General has become a Viceroy representing the Sovereign, and the location of the Company turned into taken by way of a Secretary of State for India accountable to the British Parliament. In 1877, Lord Beaconsfield, to complete the paintings, prompted Queen Victoria to be proclaimed Empress of India.

Upon these brilliant strains India and Britain are related at the existing time. India remains the empire of the Great Mogul, however the Great Mogul has been changed by means of the “topped republic” of Great Britain. India is an autocracy without an autocrat. Its rule combines the disadvantage of absolute monarchy with the impersonality and irresponsibility of democratic officialdom. The Indian with a complaint to make has no visible monarch to visit; his Emperor is a golden symbol; he must circulate pamphlets in England or encourage a query within the British House of Commons. The more occupied Parliament is with British affairs, the less interest India will acquire, and the more she may be at the mercy of her small organization of higher officers.

RAILWAY BRIDGE OVER THE GORGE, VICTORIA
FALLS, OF THE ZAMBESI,
SOUTHERN RHODESIA

RAILWAY BRIDGE OVER THE GORGE, VICTORIA FALLS, OF THE ZAMBESI, SOUTHERN RHODESIA

Photo: British South African Co.

Apart from India, there has been no exceptional expansion of any European Empire till the railways and the steamships were in effective motion. A giant college of political thinkers in Britain turned into disposed to regard overseas possessions as a source of weak spot to the dominion. The Australian settlements evolved slowly until in 1842 the invention of precious copper mines, and in 1851 of gold, gave them a new significance. Improvements in delivery had been additionally making Australian wool an increasingly more marketable commodity in Europe. 396Canada, too, became not remarkably innovative until 1849; it changed into afflicted via dissensions among its French and British population, there were numerous severe revolts, and it was simplest in 1867 that a new constitution growing a Federal Dominion of Canada relieved its inner lines. It was the railway that altered the Canadian outlook. It enabled Canada, just because it enabled the US, to increase westward, to marketplace its corn and other produce in Europe, and no matter its fast and sizeable growth, to remain in language and sympathy and pursuits one community. The railway, the steamship and the telegraph cable have been certainly changing all the situations of colonial development.

Before 1840, English settlements had already began in New Zealand, and a New Zealand Land Company have been formed to take advantage of the opportunities of the island. In 1840 New Zealand also was added to the colonial possessions of the British Crown.

Canada, as we've referred to, become the first of the British possessions to reply richly to the brand new economic opportunities that the new techniques of transport were starting. Presently the republics of South America, and

especially the Argentine Republic, began to feel in their farm animals alternate and coffee developing the accelerated nearness of the European marketplace. Hitherto the leader commodities that had attracted the European powers into unsettled and barbaric regions have been gold or different metals, spices, ivory, or slaves. But inside the latter quarter of the nineteenth century the boom of the European populations become obliging their governments to appearance abroad for staple ingredients; and the increase of clinical industrialism became growing a demand for brand new uncooked materials, fats and greases of each type, rubber, and other hitherto omitted substances. It changed into plain that Great Britain and Holland and Portugal have been reaping a exquisite and developing commercial advantage from their very massive control of tropical and sub-tropical products. After 1871 Germany, and presently France and later Italy, started to look for unannexed uncooked-material areas, or for Oriental nations capable of worthwhile modernization.

So started out a fresh scramble all over the international, besides within the American region in which the Monroe Doctrine now barred such adventures, for politically unprotected lands.

397Close to Europe became the continent of Africa, full of vaguely recognized possibilities. In 1850 it turned into a continent of black thriller; simplest Egypt and the coast have been regarded. Here we don't have any area to inform the excellent tale of the explorers and adventurers who first pierced the African darkness, and of the political retailers, directors, investors, settlers and medical men who accompanied of their tune. Wonderful races of guys like the pygmies, ordinary beasts just like the okapi, marvellous end result and vegetation and insects, terrible diseases, remarkable scenery of woodland and mountain, sizeable inland seas and huge rivers and cascades have been revealed; a whole new world. Even remains (at Zimbabwe) of some unrecorded and

vanished civilization, the southward enterprise of an early people, have been located. Into this new global got here the Europeans, and discovered the rifle already there in the hands of the Arab slave-traders, and negro life in ailment.

Map: The British Empire in 1815

By 1900, in half a century, all Africa became mapped, explored, predicted and divided between the European powers. Little heed was given to the welfare of the natives in this scramble. The Arab slaver was certainly curbed rather than expelled, however the greed for rubber, which turned into a wild product accrued under compulsion through the natives within the Belgian Congo, a greed exacerbated through the conflict of inexperienced European administrators with the native 398populace, brought about horrible atrocities. No European power has flawlessly clean hands on this count number.

We can not tell here in any detail how Great Britain got possession of Egypt in 1883 and remained there in spite of the fact that Egypt was technically part of the Turkish Empire, nor how almost this scramble brought about warfare between France and Great Britain in 1898, when a sure Colonel Marchand, crossing Central Africa from the west coast, tried at Fashoda to capture the Upper Nile.

Nor are we able to tell how the British Government first let the Boers, or Dutch settlers, of the Orange River district and the Transvaal installation impartial republics within the inland parts of South Africa, after which repented and annexed the Transvaal Republic in 1877; nor how the Transvaal Boers fought for freedom and received it after the war of Majuba Hill (1881). Majuba Hill became made to rankle within the memory of the English people with the aid of a continual press campaign. A conflict with both republics broke out in 1899, a

3 years' struggle tremendously expensive to the British people, which ended at closing in the give up of the two republics.

Their length of subjugation changed into a brief one. In 1907, after the downfall of the imperialist government which had conquered them, the Liberals took the South African problem in hand, and these former republics have become unfastened and pretty inclined buddies with Cape Colony and Natal in a Confederation of all of the states of South Africa as one self-governing republic under the British Crown.

In 1 / 4 of a century the partition of Africa became completed. There remained unannexed 3 relatively small nations: Liberia, a settlement of liberated negro slaves on the west coast; Morocco, underneath a Moslem Sultan; and Abyssinia, a barbaric usa, with an ancient and odd form of Christianity, which had correctly maintained its independence in opposition to Italy at the struggle of Adowa in 1896.

399

LXIII

EUROPEAN AGGRESSION IN ASIA AND THE RISE OF JAPAN

IT is tough to accept as true with that any massive wide variety of human beings sincerely common this headlong portray of the map of Africa in European colours as a everlasting new settlement of the worlds affairs, however it's miles the responsibility of the historian to file that it became so time-honored. There become however a shallow ancient background to the European mind inside the nineteenth century, and no addiction of penetrating complaint. The pretty transient benefits that the mechanical revolution in the west

had given the Europeans over the relaxation of the old global were seemed by way of human beings, blankly ignorant of such events as the excellent Mongol conquests, as evidences of a permanent and confident European leadership of mankind. They had no sense of the transferability of technological know-how and its end result. They did not recognize that Chinamen and Indians ought to carry on the paintings of studies as ably as Frenchmen or Englishmen. They believed that there has been some innate highbrow pressure inside the west, and a few innate indolence and conservatism inside the east, that assured the Europeans a world predominance for ever.

The result of this infatuation became that the various European foreign workplaces set themselves no longer simply to scramble with the British for the savage and undeveloped areas of the world's floor, but also to carve up the populous and civilized international locations of Asia as even though those humans additionally had been no extra than raw material for exploitation. The inwardly precarious but outwardly high-quality imperialism of the British ruling class in India, and the significant and worthwhile possessions of the Dutch within the East Indies, filled the rival Great Powers with desires of similar glories in Persia, in the disintegrating Ottoman Empire, and in Further India, China and Japan.

Four hundred
In 1898 Germany seized Kiau Chau in China. Britain replied by seizing Wei-hai-wei, and the subsequent 12 months the Russians took ownership of Port Arthur. A flame of hatred for the Europeans swept via China. There had been massacres of Europeans and Christian converts, and in 1900 an attack upon and siege of the European legations in Peking. A mixed force of Europeans made a punitive expedition to Peking, rescued the legations, and stole an full-size amount of precious assets. The Russians then seized Manchuria, and in 1904, the British invaded Tibet....

But now a brand new Power appeared in the struggle of the Great Powers, Japan. Hitherto Japan has performed however a small element in this records; her secluded civilization has not contributed very in large part to the overall shaping of human destinies; she has obtained an awful lot, but she has given little. The Japanese right are of the Mongolian race. Their civilization, their writing and their literary and creative traditions are derived from the Chinese. Their history is an interesting and romantic one; they advanced a feudal machine and a system of chivalry in the earlier centuries of the Christian generation; their attacks upon Korea and China are an Eastern equivalent of the English wars in France. Japan became first brought into touch with Europe within the sixteenth century; in 1542 a few Portuguese reached it in a Chinese junk, and in 1549 a Jesuit missionary, Francis Xavier, started his teaching there. For a time Japan welcomed European intercourse, and the Christian missionaries made a exquisite wide variety of converts. A sure William Adams have become the most depended on European adviser of the Japanese, and confirmed them how to build massive ships. There were voyages in Japanese-built ships to India and Peru. Then arose complicated quarrels among the Spanish Dominicans, the Portuguese Jesuits, and the English and Dutch Protestants, each caution the Japanese against the political designs of the others. The Jesuits, in a section of ascendancy, persecuted and insulted the Buddhists with exquisite acrimony. In the stop the Japanese got here to the realization that the Europeans have been an insupportable nuisance, and that Catholic Christianity in particular become a mere cloak for the political goals of the Pope and the Spanish monarchy—already in ownership of the Philippine Islands; there was a top notch persecution of the Christians, and in 1638 Japan become actually closed to Europeans, and remained closed for over 200 years. During the ones two centuries the Japanese had been as absolutely reduce off from the rest of the sector as although they lived upon every other planet. It changed into forbidden to construct any ship large

than an insignificant coasting boat. No Japanese ought to move abroad, and no European input the u . S ..

JAPANESE SOLDIER ON THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

JAPANESE SOLDIER ON THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

(In the Victoria and Albert Museum)

For centuries Japan remained outdoor the principle cutting-edge of history. She lived on in a nation of picturesque feudalism in which approximately 5 in step with cent of the population, the samurai, or fighting men, and the nobles and their families, tyrannized without restraint over the rest of the populace. Meanwhile the exquisite international outside went directly to wider visions and new powers. Strange delivery became extra common, passing the Japanese headlands; now and again ships had been wrecked and sailors introduced ashore. Through the Dutch agreement in the island of Deshima, their one link with the outer universe, got here warnings that Japan turned into not retaining pace with the strength of the Western international. In 1837 a ship sailed into Yedo Bay flying a peculiar flag of stripes and stars, and carrying some Japanese sailors she had picked up a long way adrift within the Pacific. She become pushed off with the aid of cannon shot. This flag presently reappeared on different ships. One in 1849 got here to call for the liberation 402of eighteen shipwrecked American sailors. Then in 1853 got here four American warships underneath Commodore Perry, and refused to be driven away. He lay at anchor in forbidden waters, and sent messages to the two rulers who at that point shared the manipulate of Japan. In 1854 he again with ten ships, super ships propelled by means of steam, and geared up with large guns, and he made proposals for trade and intercourse that the Japanese had no strength to withstand. He landed with a protect of 500 guys to sign the treaty. Incredulous crowds watched this visitation from the outer world, marching through the streets.

Russia, Holland and Britain followed in the wake of America. A great nobleman whose estates commanded the Straits of Shimonoseki noticed a match to hearth on foreign vessels, and a bombardment through a fleet of British, French, Dutch and American warships destroyed his batteries and scattered his swordsmen. Finally an allied squadron (1865), at anchor off Kioto, imposed a ratification of the treaties which opened Japan to the sector.

The humiliation of the Japanese with the aid of these activities became severe. With astounding electricity and intelligence they set themselves to bring their subculture and organization to the level of the European Powers. Never in all the history of mankind did a state make any such stride as Japan then did. In 1866 she turned into a medieval people, a exquisite caricature of the extremest romantic feudalism; in 1899 hers turned into a totally Westernized human beings, on a stage with the maximum advanced European Powers. She absolutely dispelled the persuasion that Asia was in a few irrevocable manner hopelessly at the back of Europe. She made all European progress appear sluggish by assessment.

We can't inform here in any detail of Japan's battle with China in 1894-ninety five. It established the quantity of her Westernization. She had an green Westernized army and a small however sound fleet. But the significance of her renaissance, although it became favored by Britain and the United States, who had been already treating her as if she have been a European state, changed into not understood via the alternative Great Powers engaged in the pursuit of new Indias in Asia. Russia was pushing down via Manchuria to Korea. France became already established a long way to the south in Tonkin and Annam, Germany become 403prowling hungrily on the appearance-out for some agreement. The 3 Powers mixed to save you Japan reaping any end result from the Chinese struggle. She became exhausted by the war, and they threatened her with battle.

A STREET IN TOKIO

A STREET IN TOKIO

Japan submitted for a time and accumulated her forces. Within ten years she changed into ready for a struggle with Russia, which marks an epoch within the records of Asia, the close of the period of European vanity. The Russian people were, of direction, harmless and unaware of this trouble that turned into being made for them midway spherical the world, and the wiser Russian statesmen had been towards these silly thrusts; however a gang of financial adventurers, consisting of the Grand Dukes, his cousins, surrounded the Tsar. They had gambled deeply within the prospective looting of Manchuria and China, and they'd go through no withdrawal. So there started a transportation of fantastic armies of Japanese soldiers across the ocean to Port Arthur and Korea, and the sending of infinite trainloads of Russian peasants alongside the Siberian railway to die in those distant battlefields.

404The Russians, badly led and dishonestly supplied, had been overwhelmed on sea and land alike. The Russian Baltic Fleet sailed round Africa to be completely destroyed within the Straits of Tshushima. A innovative movement a number of the commonplace humans of Russia, infuriated via this remote and reasonless slaughter, obliged the Tsar to quit the struggle (1905); he back the southern 1/2 of Saghalien, which have been seized by using Russia in 1875, evacuated Manchuria, resigned Korea to Japan. The European invasion of Asia become coming to an quit and the retraction of Europe's tentacles became starting.

THE BRITISH EMPIRE IN 1914

WE may additionally word here in short the varied nature of the parts of the British Empire in 1914 which the steamship and railway had introduced collectively. It turned into and is a quite precise political aggregate; nothing of the kind has ever existed before.

First and central to the complete system became the “crowned republic” of the United British Kingdom, including (against the need of a sizeable part of the Irish people) Ireland. The majority of the British Parliament, made of the 3 united parliaments of England and Wales, Scotland and Ireland, determines the headship, the excellent and coverage of the ministry, and determines it in large part on issues springing up out of British home politics. It is that this ministry that is the effective preferred authorities, with powers of peace and warfare, over all of the rest of the empire.

Next so as of political significance to the British States have been the “crowned republics” of Australia, Canada, Newfoundland (the oldest British possession, 1583), New Zealand and South Africa, all practically impartial and self-governing states in alliance with Great Britain, but every with a consultant of the Crown appointed by way of the Government in workplace;

Next the Indian Empire, an extension of the Empire of the Great Mogul with its based and “covered” states attaining now from Beluchistan to Burma, and which includes Aden, in all of which empire the British Crown and the India Office (beneath Parliamentary manipulate) played the position of the unique Turkoman dynasty;

Then the ambiguous ownership of Egypt, nonetheless nominally a part of the Turkish Empire and nevertheless keeping its own monarch, the Khedive, but under almost despotic British reputable rule;

406

Map: OVERSEAS EMPIRES of EUROPEAN POWERS,
January 1914

Then the still extra ambiguous “Anglo-Egyptian” Sudan
407 province, occupied and administered jointly through the British and through the (British controlled) Egyptian Government;

Then some of partly self-governing groups, some British in starting place and a few no longer, with elected legislatures and an appointed executive, such as Malta, Jamaica, the Bahamas and Bermuda;

Then the Crown colonies, in which the rule of the British Home Government (through the Colonial Office) verged on autocracy, as in Ceylon, Trinidad and Fiji (wherein there has been an appointed council), and Gibraltar and St. Helena (where there was a governor);

GIBRALTAR

GIBRALTAR

Photo: C. Sinclair

Then excellent areas of (mainly) tropical lands, raw-product areas, with politically weak and beneath-civilized local groups which had been nominally protectorates, and administered both with the aid of a High Commissioner set over local chiefs

(as in Basutoland) or over a chartered organization (as in Rhodesia). In a few instances the Foreign Office, in a few instances the Colonial Office, and in a few instances the India Office, has been involved in obtaining the possessions that fell into this final and least precise elegance of all, however for the most component the Colonial Office changed into now responsible for them.

It might be occur, therefore, that no unmarried workplace and no unmarried brain had ever comprehended the British Empire as an entire. It changed into a combination of growths and accumulations totally one-of-a-kind from anything that has ever been referred to as an empire earlier than. It assured a extensive peace and protection; this is why it become persevered and sustained through many men of the “subject” races—no matter professional tyrannies 408and insufficiencies, and of tons negligence on the a part of the “domestic” public. Like the Athenian Empire, it was an distant places empire; its methods have been sea approaches, and its not unusual hyperlink became the British Navy. Like all empires, its brotherly love was based physically upon a method of communication; the improvement of seamanship, deliver-constructing and steamships between the sixteenth and nineteenth centuries had made it a probable and handy Pax—the “Pax Britannica,” and fresh trends of air or rapid land shipping would possibly at any time make it inconvenient.

STREET IN HONG KONG

STREET IN HONG KONG

Photo: Underwood & Underwood

THE AGE OF ARMAMENT IN EUROPE, AND THE GREAT WAR OF 1914-18

THE progress in material technology that created this extensive steamboat-and-railway republic of America and unfold this precarious British steamship empire over the world, produced pretty other outcomes upon the congested international locations upon the continent of Europe. They found themselves restricted within barriers fixed throughout the pony-and-high-road length of human life, and their growth remote places have been very largely anticipated by means of Great Britain. Only Russia had any freedom to increase eastward; and she or he drove a awesome railway across Siberia till she entangled herself in a conflict with Japan, and driven south-eastwardly in the direction of the borders of Persia and India to the annoyance of Britain. The relaxation of the European Powers were in a state of intensifying congestion. In order to realise the overall possibilities of the new apparatus of human lifestyles they needed to rearrange their affairs upon a broader basis, both by means of a few kind of voluntary union or via a union imposed upon them by way of a few main electricity. The tendency of modern notion was inside the route of the former alternative, but all of the force of political way of life drove Europe toward the latter.

The downfall of the “empire” of Napoleon III, the status quo of the brand new German Empire, pointed men’s hopes and fears in the direction of the idea of a Europe consolidated under German auspices. For thirty-six years of uneasy peace the politics of Europe concentrated upon that possibility. France, the steadfast rival of Germany for European ascendancy for the reason that division of the empire of Charlemagne, sought to correct her own weakness by a close alliance with Russia, and Germany related herself carefully with the Austrian Empire (it had ceased to be the Holy Roman Empire inside the days of Napoleon I) and less successfully with the new kingdom of Italy. 410At first Great Britain stood

as common 1/2 in and half of out of continental affairs. But she became progressively compelled right into a close affiliation with the Franco-Russian institution by means of the competitive development of a exquisite German navy. The grandiose creativeness of the Emperor William II (1888-1918) thrust Germany into premature remote places organization that in the end brought no longer simplest Great Britain but Japan and the USA into the circle of her enemies.

BRITISH TANK IN THE BATTLE OF THE MENIN ROAD

BRITISH TANK IN THE BATTLE OF THE MENIN ROAD

The team came out for a breath of clean air at some stage in a lull

Photo: British Official

All those international locations armed. Year after yr the percentage of countrywide manufacturing devoted to the making of guns, gadget, battleships and the like, extended. Year after yr the balance 411of factors regarded trembling towards conflict, after which war might be averted. At final it got here. Germany and Austria struck at France and Russia and Serbia; the German armies marching thru Belgium, Britain right now came into the struggle on the side of Belgium, bringing in Japan as her ally, and really quickly Turkey accompanied on the German facet. Italy entered the battle in opposition to Austria in 1915, and Bulgaria joined the Central Powers inside the October of that year. In 1916 Rumania, and in 1917 america and China have been pressured into war towards Germany. It isn't in the scope of this records to outline the exact proportion of blame for this big disaster. The greater interesting question is not why the Great War became all started however why the Great War changed into not expected and averted. It is a far graver issue for mankind that scores of thousands and thousands of people were too "patriotic," silly, or apathetic to save you this catastrophe by way of a motion in the direction of European team spirit upon frank and generous

strains, than that a small variety of humans may additionally were lively in bringing it approximately.

THE RUINS OF YPRES (ONCE A DELIGHTFUL OLD FLEMISH TOWN)

THE RUINS OF YPRES (ONCE A DELIGHTFUL OLD FLEMISH TOWN)

To display the whole destructiveness of present day struggle

Photo: Topical

THE DEVASTATION OF MODERN WAR

THE DEVASTATION OF MODERN WAR

Wire entanglements in the foreground

Photo: Photopress

It is not possible within the area at our command here to trace the elaborate info of the battle. Within some months it became apparent that the progress of current technical science had changed the nature of conflict very profoundly. Physical science gives electricity, electricity over metal, over distance, over disorder; whether or not that strength is used properly or ill relies upon upon the moral and political intelligence of the sector. The governments of Europe, stimulated by means of antiquated policies of hate and suspicion, observed themselves with unexampled powers both of destruction and resistance in their fingers. The warfare became a consuming fire spherical and about the world, causing losses both to victors and vanquished out of all percentage to the problems involved.

The first section of the warfare became a awesome rush of the Germans upon Paris and an invasion of East Prussia by way of the Russians. Both attacks have been held and became. Then the power of the shielding developed; there was a rapid elaboration of trench battle till for a time the opposing armies lay entrenched in lengthy strains proper across Europe, not able to make any increase with out substantial losses. The armies have been millions robust, and behind them complete

populations had been organized for the supply of food and munitions to the the front. Then become a cessation of nearly each type of effective hobby besides which include contributed to military operations. All the able-bodied manhood of Europe become drawn into the armies or navies or into the improvised 413factories that served them. There turned into an vast substitute of fellows by girls in enterprise. Probably extra than half of the human beings inside the belligerent international locations of Europe changed their employment altogether during this stupendous struggle. They were socially uprooted and transplanted. Education and ordinary medical work were restrained or diverted to instant navy ends, and the distribution of information was crippled and corrupted by way of military manipulate and “propaganda” sports.

The phase of military impasse handed slowly into one in all aggression upon the combatant populations behind the fronts with the aid of the destruction of food materials and by using assaults thru the air. And also there has been a consistent improvement inside the length and variety of the weapons hired and of such resourceful gadgets as poison-fuel shells and the small mobile forts referred to as tanks, to break down the resistance of troops in the trenches. The air offensive was the maximum modern of all the new methods. It carried warfare from dimensions into three. Hitherto within the records of mankind battle had gone on simplest wherein the armies marched and met. Now it went on everywhere. First the Zeppelin after which the bombing aeroplane carried battle over and past the front to an ever- growing region of civilian activities past. The vintage distinction maintained in civilized conflict between the civilian and combatant populace disappeared. Everyone who grew meals, or who sewed a garment, anybody who felled a tree or repaired a residence, every railway station and each warehouse turned into held to be truthful sport for destruction. The air offensive expanded in variety and terror with each month inside the battle. At last first rate areas of Europe were in a state of siege and subject to

nightly raids. Such exposed cities as London and Paris exceeded sleepless night time after sleepless night time while the bombs burst, the anti-plane guns maintained an intolerable racket, and the hearth engines and ambulances rattled headlong thru the darkened and abandoned streets. The effects upon the minds and health of vintage humans and of young children have been particularly distressing and damaging.

Pestilence, that vintage follower of warfare, did no longer arrive until the very quit of the fighting in 1918. For 4 years clinical technological know-how staved off any preferred epidemic; then got here a high-quality outbreak of 414influenza about the sector which destroyed many thousands and thousands of people. Famine additionally became staved off for some time. By the beginning of 1918 but most of Europe changed into in a state of mitigated and regulated famine. The manufacturing of food throughout the world had fallen very greatly thru the calling off of peasant mankind to the fronts, and the distribution of such food as turned into produced was impeded by the havoc wrought by way of the submarine, by the rupture of customary routes through the closing of frontiers, and by the disorganization of the transport machine of the world. The various governments took possession of the dwindling food components, and, with more or much less achievement, rationed their populations. By the fourth yr the complete global become stricken by shortages of clothing and housing and of maximum of the everyday tools of life as well as of meals. Business and monetary life have been profoundly disorganized. Every-one turned into worried, and most people had been main lives of unwonted soreness.

The real battle ceased in November, 1918. After a perfect attempt inside the spring of 1918 that nearly carried the Germans to Paris, the Central Powers collapsed. They had come to an quit in their spirit and resources.

LXVI

THE REVOLUTION AND FAMINE IN RUSSIA

BUT an amazing year and extra earlier than the fall apart of the Central Powers the half oriental monarchy of Russia, which had professed to be the continuation of the Byzantine Empire, had collapsed. The Tsardom were showing signs and symptoms of profound rottenness for some years earlier than the conflict; the courtroom was below the sway of a terrific religious impostor, Rasputin, and the general public management, civil and army, became in a nation of excessive inefficiency and corruption. At the outset of the struggle there has been a terrific flare of patriotic enthusiasm in Russia. A substantial conscript military turned into called up, for which there has been neither adequate military gadget nor a right deliver of equipped officials, and this exceptional host, unwell furnished and badly treated, became hurled towards the German and Austrian frontiers.

There may be absolute confidence that the early appearance of Russian armies in East Prussia in September, 1914, diverted the energies and interest of the Germans from their first successful drive upon Paris. The sufferings and deaths of rankings of thousands of sick-led Russian peasants stored France from whole overthrow in that momentous opening marketing campaign, and made all western Europe the borrowers of that superb and tragic people. But the pressure of the conflict upon this sprawling, ill-prepared empire become too heavy for its power. The Russian not unusual squaddies were sent into conflict with out weapons to assist them, without even rifle ammunition; they had been wasted by means of their officers and generals in a delirium of militarist enthusiasm. For a time they regarded to be suffering mutely

because the beasts suffer; but there may be a restrict to the endurance even of the most ignorant. A profound disgust for Tsardom become creeping through those armies of betrayed and wasted men. From the near of 1915 onward Russia become a supply of deepening tension to her Western Allies. Throughout 1916 she remained in large part on 416the protecting, and there had been rumours of a separate peace with Germany.

On December 29th, 1916, the monk Rasputin changed into murdered at a dinner party in Petrograd, and a belated strive changed into made to position the Tsardom so as. By March matters have been moving hastily; meals riots in Petrograd developed right into a progressive insurrection; there was an attempted suppression of the Duma, the consultant body, there were attempted arrests of liberal leaders, the formation of a provisional government underneath Prince Lvoff, and an abdication (March 15th) through the Tsar. For a time it regarded that a slight and controlled revolution might be feasible—possibly underneath a new Tsar. Then it became obvious that the destruction of famous confidence in Russia had gone too far for this type of modifications. The Russian human beings had been ill to death of the antique order of factors in Europe, of Tsars and wars and of Great Powers; it desired alleviation, and that quickly, from unendurable miseries. The Allies had no knowledge of Russian realities; their diplomatists were unaware of Russian, genteel individuals with their attention directed to the Russian Court in place of to Russia, they blundered progressively with the new state of affairs. There turned into little goodwill among these diplomatists for republicanism, and a manifest disposition to embarrass the brand new government as tons as possible. At the pinnacle of the Russian republican authorities become an eloquent and picturesque leader, Kerensky, who discovered himself assailed by way of the forces of a profounder innovative movement, the “social revolution,” at domestic and cold-shouldered via the Allied governments overseas. His

Allies could neither permit him provide the Russian peasants the land for which they craved nor peace beyond their frontiers. The French and the British press pestered their exhausted ally for a sparkling offensive, however while currently the Germans made a sturdy attack by using sea and land upon Riga, the British Admiralty quailed earlier than the possibility of a Baltic day trip in comfort. The new Russian Republic had to fight unsupported. In spite of their naval predominance and the bitter protests of the exceptional English admiral, Lord Fisher (1841-1920), it's miles to be cited that the British and their Allies, besides for a few submarine attacks, left the Germans the complete mastery of the Baltic in the course of the struggle.

417The Russian hundreds, but, had been resolute to end the war. At any price. There had come into existence in Petrograd a body representing the employees and common squaddies, the Soviet, and this frame clamoured for an worldwide convention of socialists at Stockholm. Food riots were taking place in Berlin at the moment, battle weariness in Austria and Germany turned into profound, and there can be no doubt, within the light of subsequent events, that one of these convention could have precipitated an inexpensive peace on democratic lines in 1917 and a German revolution. Kerensky implored his Western allies to permit this conference to take vicinity, however, fearful of a worldwide outbreak of socialism and republicanism, they refused, notwithstanding the beneficial response of a small majority of the British Labour Party. Without both moral or bodily assist from the Allies, the sad "slight" Russian Republic nevertheless fought on and made a closing determined offensive effort in July. It failed after some initial successes, and there got here another fantastic slaughtering of Russians.

The limit of Russian patience turned into reached. Mutinies broke out in the Russian armies, and specifically upon the northern front, and on November 7th, 1917, Kerensky's

authorities changed into overthrown and electricity became seized by using the Soviets, dominated by using the Bolshevik socialists beneath Lenin, and pledged to make peace no matter the Western powers. On March 2nd, 1918, a separate peace among Russia and Germany became signed at Brest-Litovsk.

418

A VIEW IN PETERSBURG UNDER BOLSHEVIK RULE

A VIEW IN PETERSBURG UNDER BOLSHEVIK RULE

A wood residence has been demolished for firewood

By courtesy of Messrs. Hodder & Stoughton

It briskly have become evident that these Bolshevik socialists had been guys of a completely unique great from the rhetorical constitutionalists and revolutionaries of the Kerensky phase. They have been fanatical Marxist communists. They believed that their accession to power in Russia turned into simplest the outlet of a international-huge social revolution, and they set about changing the social and economic order with the thoroughness of best religion and absolute inexperience. The western European and the American governments had been themselves a great deal too unwell-informed and incapable to guide or help this superb experiment, and the click set itself to discredit and the ruling lessons to wreck these usurpers upon any terms and at any fee to themselves or to Russia. A propaganda of abominable and disgusting innovations went on unchecked in the press of the 419world; the Bolshevik leaders had been represented as remarkable monsters glutted with blood and plunder and dwelling lives of sensuality earlier than which the realities of the Tsarist courtroom during the Rasputin regime paled to a white purity. Expeditions had been released on the exhausted u . S . A . , insurgents and raiders had been advocated, armed and backed, and no technique of attack was too suggest or too colossal for the anxious enemies of the Bolshevik regime. In 1919, the Russian Bolsheviks, ruling a country already exhausted and disorganized with the aid of

five years of extensive conflict, were fighting a British Expedition at Archangel, Japanese invaders in Eastern Siberia, Roumanians with French and Greek contingents within the south, the Russian Admiral Koltchak in Siberia and General Deniken, supported by means of the French fleet, inside the Crimea. In July of that 12 months an Esthonian army, under General Yudenitch, nearly got to Petersburg. In 1920 the Poles, incited with the aid of the French, made a brand new assault on Russia; and a brand new reactionary raider, General Wrangel, took over the task of General Deniken in invading and devastating his own u . S . A .. In March, 1921, the sailors at Cronstadt revolted. The Russian Government beneath its president, Lenin, survived most of these numerous assaults. It showed an outstanding tenacity, and the not unusual people of Russia sustained it unswervingly underneath conditions of excessive worry. By the give up of 1921 both Britain and Italy had made a form of reputation of the communist rule.

But if the Bolshevik Government become a hit in its battle against foreign intervention and internal riot, it turned into a long way less satisfied in its tries to set up a brand new social order primarily based upon communist ideas in Russia. The Russian peasant is a small land-hungry owner, as a ways from communism in his mind and techniques as a whale is from flying; the revolution gave him the land of the high-quality landowners however couldn't make him develop meals for some thing however negotiable cash, and the revolution, amongst other things, had practically destroyed the fee of money. Agricultural manufacturing, already greatly disordered by using the collapse of the railways through struggle-pressure, shrank to a trifling cultivation of meals by the peasants for their very own intake. The towns starved. Hasty and ill-planned attempts to make over industrial production 420 according with communist thoughts had been similarly unsuccessful. By 1920 Russia provided the extraordinary spectacle of a current civilization in entire fall apart. Railways have been rusting and passing out of use, towns have been

falling into break, anywhere there has been a giant mortality. Yet the u . S . Nevertheless fought with its enemies at its gates. In 1921 got here a drought and a top notch famine a number of the peasant cultivators in the war-devastated south-east provinces. Millions of human beings starved.

But the query of the distresses and the possible healing of Russia brings us too close to present day controversies to be discussed here.

421

LXVII

THE POLITICAL AND SOCIAL RECONSTRUCTION OF THE WORLD

THE scheme and scale upon which this History is deliberate do no longer allow us to enter into the complex and acrimonious disputes that centre approximately the treaties, and specifically of the treaty of Versailles, which concluded the Great War. We are starting to realize that that struggle, horrible and sizeable because it turned into, ended not anything, began not anything and settled not anything. It killed thousands and thousands of people; it wasted and impoverished the world. It smashed Russia altogether. It changed into at first-rate an acute and frightful reminder that we were residing foolishly and confusedly with out a great deal plan or foresight in a risky and unsympathetic universe. The crudely organized egotisms and passions of countrywide and imperial greed that carried mankind into that tragedy, emerged from it sufficiently unimpaired to make a few other similar disaster exceptionally possibly so soon as the sector has a bit recovered from its war exhaustion and fatigue. Wars and revolutions make nothing; their utmost carrier to mankind is that, in a very difficult and painful manner, they destroy

superannuated and obstructive things. The remarkable conflict lifted the risk of German imperialism from Europe, and shattered the imperialism of Russia. It cleared away a number of monarchies. But a mess of flags still waves in Europe, the frontiers nevertheless exasperate, notable armies gather clean stores of device.

The Peace Conference at Versailles changed into a meeting very unwell adapted to do extra than perform the conflicts and defeats of the conflict to their logical conclusions. The Germans, Austrians, Turks and Bulgarians have been accredited no proportion in its deliberations; they have been handiest to simply accept the choices it dictated to them. From the point of view of human welfare the selection of the vicinity of meeting was especially unlucky. It turned into at Versailles in 1871 that, with each circumstance of positive vulgarity, the new German 422Empire had been proclaimed. The thought of a melodramatic reversal of that scene, in the identical Hall of Mirrors, was overpowering.

Whatever generosities had regarded within the opening levels of the Great War had lengthy been exhausted. The populations of the triumphant countries have been acutely privy to their very own losses and sufferings, and entirely irrespective of the reality that the defeated had paid within the like manner. The warfare had arisen as a natural and inevitable effect of the competitive nationalisms of Europe and the absence of any Federal adjustment of these aggressive forces; conflict is the important logical consummation of independent sovereign nationalities dwelling in too small an area with too effective an armament; and if the top notch struggle had no longer come inside the shape it did it'd have are available a few similar shape—just as it will surely return upon a still extra disastrous scale in twenty or thirty years' time if no political unification anticipates and prevents it. States organized for war will make wars as certainly as hens will lay eggs, but the feeling of these distressed and battle-worn nations ignored this reality, and the

whole of the defeated peoples had been handled as morally and materially chargeable for all the harm, as they could absolute confidence have dealt with the victor peoples had the difficulty of war been exceptional. The French and English concept the Germans were responsible, the Germans concept the Russians, French and English were to blame, and best an wise minority thought that there has been something responsible in the fragmentary political constitution of Europe. The treaty of Versailles turned into meant to be exemplary and vindictive; it furnished exceptional consequences for the vanquished; it sought to offer compensations for the wounded and struggling victors by means of imposing sizable money owed upon international locations already bankrupt, and its tries to reconstitute worldwide family members with the aid of the status quo of a League of Nations towards war had been obviously insincere and insufficient.

PASSENGER AEROPLANE FLYING OVER NORTHOLT

PASSENGER AEROPLANE FLYING OVER NORTHOLT

(Photo taken by some other 'plane by way of the Central Aerophoto Co.)

So far as Europe changed into concerned it is doubtful if there might have been any strive anything to prepare international relations for a everlasting peace. The proposal of the League of Nations became introduced into sensible politics by using the President of the US of America, President Wilson. Its leader help become in America. So far america, this new current kingdom, had 423evolved no exclusive thoughts of international dating beyond the Monroe Doctrine, which included the brand new world from European interference. Now all of sudden it changed into known as upon for its intellectual contribution to the big problem of the time. It had none. The natural disposition of the American human beings was closer to a everlasting international peace. With this but was related a sturdy traditional mistrust of antique-world polities and a addiction of isolation from vintage-international

entanglements. The Americans had rarely started to suppose out an American solution of global troubles whilst the submarine campaign of the Germans dragged them into the struggle on the aspect of the anti-German allies. President Wilson's scheme of a League of Nations turned into an try at short observe to create a distinctively American international mission. It turned into a sketchy, insufficient and threatening scheme. In Europe however it turned into taken as a matured American factor of view. The generality of mankind in 1918-19 was intensely weary of war and aggravating at almost any sacrifice to erect boundaries against its recurrence, however there was now not a unmarried authorities within the old world inclined to waive one iota of its sovereign independence to obtain any such give up. The public utterances of President Wilson leading up to the task of a World League of Nations appeared for a time to appeal proper over the heads of the governments to the peoples of the sector; they were taken as expressing the ripe intentions of America, and the reaction changed into vast. Unhappily President Wilson needed to address governments and no longer with peoples; he was a person capable of fantastic flashes of vision and yet while placed to the take a look at egotistical and confined, and the amazing wave of enthusiasm he evoked exceeded and become wasted.

Says Dr. Dillon in his e-book, *The Peace Conference*:
“Europe, whilst the President touched its shorelines, become as clay equipped for the creative potter. Never before were the international locations so eager to observe a Moses who would take them to the long-promised land in which wars are prohibited and blockades unknown. And to their wondering he become simply that wonderful leader. In France men bowed down before him with awe and affection. Labour leaders in Paris told me that they shed tears of joy in his presence, and that their comrades would undergo fire and water to help him to understand his noble schemes. To the working classes in Italy his name turned into a heavenly clarion on the sound

of which the earth could be renewed. The Germans regarded him and his doctrine as their sheet-anchor of protection. The fearless Herr Muehlton said: 'If President Wilson had been to deal with the Germans and pronounce a intense sentence upon them, they could receive it with resignation and without a murmur and set to work immediately.' In German-Austria his fame became that of a saviour, and the mere mention of his name brought balm to the suffering and surcease of sorrow to the troubled”

Such were the overpowering expectations that President Wilson raised. How completely he disenchanted them and how susceptible and futile was the League of Nations he made is simply too long and too distressful a tale to inform here. He exaggerated in his man or woman our common human tragedy, he become so very super in his desires and so incapable in his overall performance. America dissented from the acts of its President and might not be a part of the League Europe frequent from him. There become a slow realization at the a part of the American 425people that it were rushed into some thing for which it become completely unprepared. There became a corresponding recognition on the a part of Europe that America had nothing prepared to give to the old international in its extremity. Born upfront and crippled at its beginning, that League has come to be certainly, with its difficult and unpractical charter and its show up boundaries of strength, a serious impediment within the way of any effective reorganization of worldwide relationships. The problem would be a clearer one if the League did now not yet exist. Yet that international-extensive blaze of enthusiasm that first welcomed the mission, that readiness of fellows everywhere round and about the earth, of fellows, this is, as prominent from governments, for a international manipulate of battle, is a element to be recorded with emphasis in any records. Behind the short-sighted governments that divide and mismanage human affairs, a real pressure for global harmony and world order exists and grows.

From 1918 onward the sector entered upon an age of meetings. Of these the Conference at Washington referred to as by way of President Harding (1921) has been the maximum successful and suggestive. Notable, too, is the Genoa Conference (1922) for the arrival of German and Russian delegates at its deliberations. We will not discuss this long procession of conferences and tentatives in any detail. It becomes more and more really show up that a large paintings of reconstruction has to be achieved via mankind if a crescendo of such convulsions and international massacres as that of the exceptional war is to be prevented. No such hasty improvisation as the League of Nations, no patched-up device of Conferences between this institution of states and that, which exchange nothing with an air of settling the whole thing, will meet the complicated political needs of the brand new age that lies before us. A systematic development and a systematic application of the sciences of human relationship, of personal and organization psychology, of economic and financial science and of schooling, sciences nonetheless most effective in their infancy, is required. Narrow and obsolete, useless and loss of life moral and political thoughts must be replaced with the aid of a clearer and a easier idea of the commonplace origins and destinies of our kind.

A PEACEFUL GARDEN IN ENGLAND

A PEACEFUL GARDEN IN ENGLAND

Given expertise, all mankind would possibly live in such gardens

But if the risks, confusions and disasters that crowd upon guy in in recent times are big beyond any enjoy of the past, it's far due to the fact science has brought him such powers as he in no way had 426before. And the medical technique of fearless idea, exhaustively lucid announcement, and exhaustively criticized planning, which has given him these as yet uncontrollable powers, gives him also the wish of controlling

those powers. Man continues to be only adolescent. His troubles are not the issues of senility and exhaustion but of growing and nonetheless undisciplined electricity. When we look at all 427 history as one system, as we have been doing in this e book, while we see the steadfast upward conflict of life closer to vision and manage, then we see of their real proportions the hopes and risks of the existing time. As but we're hardly in the earliest sunrise of human greatness. But in the splendor of flower and sundown, inside the satisfied and perfect movement of younger animals and inside the satisfaction of ten thousand numerous landscapes, we've got some intimations of what existence can do for us, and in some few works of plastic and pictorial artwork, in some excellent music, in some noble buildings and glad gardens, we have an intimation of what the human will can do with fabric opportunities. We have dreams; we have at gift undisciplined however ever increasing energy. Can we doubt that currently our race will more than comprehend our boldest imaginations, that it'll achieve team spirit and peace, that it'll live, the kids of our blood and lives will stay, in a global made extra excellent and lovely than any palace or lawn that we understand, taking place from electricity to power in an ever widening circle of adventure and success? What man has carried out, the little triumphs of his present state, and all this history we've told, form but the prelude to the things that man has got to do.